

THE  
HISTORY  
OF THE  
ADVENTURES  
OF  
JOSEPH ANDREWS,  
And his Friend  
MR ABRAHAM ADAMS.

---

**LIVRES élémentaires de la Langue Angloise,**  
qui se trouvent à Paris,  
chez **THÉOPHILE BARROIS le jeune,**  
Libraire, quai des Augustins.

**ÉLÉMENTS** de la Langue Angloise, ou Méthode  
pratique pour apprendre facilement cette Langue,  
par M. Siret, nouv. édit. revue, corrigée & aug-  
mentée. *Paris*, 1780, in-8. br. 1 l. 16 s.

**Les Eléments** de la Langue Angloise, développés d'une  
maniere nouvelle, facile & concise, en forme de  
Dialogues, où la Prononciation est enseignée par un  
assemblage de Lettres qui forment des sons similaires  
en françois, & où la juste mesure de chaque syllabe  
est déterminée; avec des Phrases familières, des  
Dialogues & un Vocabulaire pour ceux qui souhai-  
tent parler Anglois en peu de temps, par V. J. Pey-  
ton, nouv. édit. 1779, in-12. rel. 3 l.

**Nouvelle Grammaire** Angloise, contenant des regles  
sûres & invariables pour apprendre cette Langue,  
enrichie d'une Syntaxe, d'un Traité des particules &  
d'une Table des principaux Verbes dont les particules  
font partie de la signification, par Lavery. *Paris*,  
1778, in-12. rel. 2 l. 10 s.

**Nouveau Dictionnaire** Anglois - François & François -  
Anglois, contenant la signification des mots, avec  
leurs différents usages, les constructions, idiômes,  
façons de parler particulieres, & les Proverbes usités  
dans l'une & l'autre Langue; les termes des Sciences,  
des Arts & des Métiers. Le tout recueilli des meilleurs  
Auteurs Anglois & François, par L. Chambaud &  
J. B. Robinet, 2 vol. in-4. rel. 27 l.

**Méthode aisée** pour prononcer & parler correctement  
la Langue Angloise, par J. A. Dumay. *Paris*, 1778,  
in-8. br. 2 l. 8 s.

**The Adventures of Telemachus**, translated into En-  
glish, by Desmaiseaux, in-12. rel. 3 l.



THE  
HISTORY  
OF THE  
ADVENTURES  
OF  
JOSEPH ANDREWS,

And his Friend

Mr ABRAHAM ADAMS,

Written in IMITATION of  
The Manner of CERVANTES,

AUTHOR of  
DON QUIXOTE

VOL. I.

P A R I S:

Printed by J. FR. VALADE,

M. DCC. LXXIX.

17427.330.27

HARVARD COLLEGE LIBRARY  
THE GIFT OF  
FRIENDS OF THE LIBRARY

Apr. 4, 1927  
(2 vols)

JOSEPH ANDREW

And the World

THE ABRAHAM ADAMS

With an Introduction of

The Manuscript of CERVANTES

A History of

DON QUIXOTE

Vol. I

P A R T I

Printed by J. F. VALADE

M. DCC. LXXIX

# P R E F A C E.

AS it is possible the mere English reader may have a different idea of romance from the author of these little volumes (1); and may consequently expect a kind of entertainment not to be found, nor which was even intended, in the following pages; it may not be improper to premise a few words concerning this kind of writing, which I do not remember to have seen hitherto attempted in our language.

The EPIC, as well as the DRAMA, is divided into tragedy and comedy. HOMER, who was the father of this species of poetry, gave us a pattern of both these, though that of the latter kind is entirely lost; which Aristotle tells us bore the same relation to comedy, which his Iliad bears to tragedy. And perhaps, that we have no more instances of it among the writers of antiquity, is owing to the loss of this great pattern, which, had it survived, would have found its imitators equally with the other poems of this great original.

And farther, as this poetry may be tragic or comic, I will not scruple to say it may be likewise either in verse or prose; for though

(1) Joseph Andrews was originally published in two volumes 12mo.

v)      P R E F A C E.

it wants one particular, which the critic enumerates in the constituent parts of an epic poem, namely metre; yet, when any kind of writing contains all its other parts, such as fable, action, characters, sentiments, and diction, and is deficient in metre only; it seems, I think, reasonable to refer it to the epic; at least, as no critic hath thought proper to range it under any other head, or to assign it a particular name to itself.

Thus the Telemachus of the archbishop of Cambray appears to me of the epic kind, as well as the Odyssæy of Homer: indeed, it is much fairer and more reasonable to give it a name common with that species from which it differs only in a single instance, than to confound it with those which it resembles in no other. Such are those voluminous works, commonly called Romances, namely Clelia, Cleopatra, Astræa, Cassandra, the Grand Cyrus, and innumerable others, which contain, as I apprehend, very little instruction or entertainment.

Now a comic romance is a comic epic-poem in prose; differing from comedy, as the serious epic from tragedy: its action being more extended and comprehensive; containing a much larger circle of incidents, and introducing a greater variety of cha-

## P R E F A C E.

vii

acters. It differs from the serious romance in its fable and action, in this, that as in the one these are grave and solemn, so in the other they are light and ridiculous: it differs in its characters, by introducing persons of inferior rank, and consequently of inferior manners; whereas the grave romance sets the highest before us: lastly, in its sentiments and diction, by preserving the ludicrous instead of the sublime. In the diction, I think, burlesque itself may be sometimes admitted; of which many instances will occur in this work, as in the description of the battles, and some other places not necessary to be pointed out to the classical reader, for whose entertainment those parodies or burlesque imitations are chiefly calculated.

But though we have sometimes admitted this in our diction, we have carefully excluded it from our sentiments and characters: for there it is never properly introduced, unless in writings of the burlesque kind, which this is not intended to be. Indeed no two species of writing can differ more widely than the comic and the burlesque: for as the latter is ever the exhibition of what is monstrous and unnatural, and where our delight, if we examine it, arises from the surprising absurdity, as in appropriating the manners of the highest to the lowest, or *e converso*; so in the former, we should ever confine ourselves

strictly to nature, from the just imitation of which will flow all the pleasure we can this way convey to a sensible reader. And perhaps there is one reason why a comic writer should of all others be the least excused for deviating from nature, since it may not be always so easy for a serious poet to meet with the great and the admirable; but life every where furnishes an accurate observer with the ridiculous.

I have hinted this little concerning burlesque; because I have often heard that name given to performances, which have been truly of the comic kind, from the author's having sometimes admitted it in his diction only; which, as it is the dress of poetry, doth, like the dress of men, establish characters, (the one of the whole poem, and the other of the whole man), in vulgar opinion beyond any of their greater excellencies: but surely a certain drollery in style, where the characters and sentiments are perfectly natural, no more constitutes the burlesque, than an empty pomp and dignity of words, where every thing else is mean and low, can intitle any performance to the appellation of the true sublime.

And I apprehend my Lord Shaftsbury's opinion of mere burlesque agrees with mine, when he asserts, there is no such thing to

be found in the writings of the Ancients. But, perhaps, I have less abhorrence than he professes for it : and that not because I have had some little success on the stage this way, but rather as it contributes more to exquisite mirth and laughter than any other; and these are probably more wholesome physic for the mind, and conduce better to purge away spleen, melancholy, and ill affections, than is generally imagined. Nay, I will appeal to common observation, whether the same companies are not found more full of good humour and benevolence, after they have been sweetened for two or three hours with entertainments of this kind, than when soured by tragedy or a grave lecture.

But to illustrate all this by another science, in which, perhaps, we shall see the distinction more clearly and plainly; let us examine the works of a comic history-painter, with those performances which the Italians call *Caricatura*; where we shall find the true excellence of the former to consist in the exactest copying of nature; insomuch that a judicious eye instantly rejects any thing *outré*, any liberty which the painter hath taken with the features of that *alma mater*;—whereas, in the *Caricatura*, we allow all licence. Its aim is to exhibit monsters, not men; and all distortions and

exaggerations whatever are within its proper province.

Now, what *Caricatura* is in painting, Burlesque is in writing; and in the same manner the comic writer and painter correlate to each other. And here I shall observe, that as in the former the painter seems to have the advantage, so it is in the latter infinitely on the side of the writer: for the Monstrous is much easier to paint than to describe, and the Ridiculous to describe than paint.

And though, perhaps, the latter species doth not in either science so strongly affect and agitate the muscles as the other; yet it will be owned, I believe, that a more rational and useful pleasure arises to us from it. He who should call the ingenious Hogarth a burlesque painter, would, in my opinion, do him very little honour: for sure it is much easier, much less the subject of admiration, to paint a man with a nose, or any other feature of a preposterous size, or to expose him in some absurd or monstrous attitude, than to express the affections of men on canvas. It hath been thought a vast commendation of a painter, to say his figures seem to breathe; but surely it is a much greater and nobler applause that they appear to think.



## P R E F A C E.

(x)

But to return—The Ridiculous only, as I have said before, falls within my province in the present work.—Nor will some explanation of this word be thought impertinent by the reader, if he considers how wonderfully it hath been mistaken, even by writers who have professed it: for to what but such a mistake can we attribute the many attempts to ridicule the blackest villainies, and, what is yet worse, the most dreadful calamities? What could exceed the absurdity of an author, who should write the comedy of Nero, with the merry incident of ripping up his mother's belly; or what would give a greater shock to humanity, than an attempt to expose the miseries of poverty and distress to ridicule? And yet, the reader will not want much learning to suggest such instances to himself.

Besides, it may seem remarkable, that Aristotle, who is so fond and free of definitions, hath not thought proper to define the Ridiculous. Indeed, where he tells us it is proper to comedy, he hath remarked that villainy is not its object: but he hath not, as I remember, positively asserted what it is. Nor doth the Abbé Bellegarde, who hath written a treatise on this subject, though he shews us many species of it, once trace it to its fountain.

The only source of the true Ridiculous (as it appears to me), is affectation. But though it rises from one spring only, when we consider the infinite streams into which this one branches, we shall presently cease to admire at the copious field it affords to an observer. Now affectation proceeds from one of these two causes, vanity or hypocrisy: for as vanity puts us on affecting false characters, in order to purchase applause; so hypocrisy sets us on an endeavour to avoid censure, by concealing our vices under an appearance of their opposite virtues. And though these two causes are often confounded, (for there is some difficulty in distinguishing them), yet, as they proceed from very different motives, so they are as clearly distinct in their operations: for, indeed, the affectation which arises from vanity is nearer to truth than the other; as it hath not that violent repugnancy of nature to struggle with, which that of the hypocrite hath. It may be likewise noted, that affectation doth not imply an absolute negation of those qualities which are affected: and therefore, though, when it proceeds from hypocrisy, it be nearly allied to deceit, yet, when it comes from vanity only, it partakes of the nature of ostentation: for instance, the affectation of liberality in a vain man, differs visibly from the same affectation in the avaricious; for

though the vain man is not what he would appear, or hath not the virtue he affects, to the degree he would be thought to have it; yet it sits less awkwardly on him than on the avaricious man, who is the very reverse of what he would seem to be.

From the discovery of this affectation arises the Ridiculous—which always strikes the reader with surprise and pleasure; and that in a higher and stronger degree when the affectation arises from hypocrisy, than when from vanity; for, to discover any one to be the exact reverse of what he affects, is more surprising, and consequently more ridiculous, than to find him a little deficient in the quality he desires the reputation of. I might observe, that our Ben Johnson, who of all men understood the Ridiculous the best, hath chiefly used the hypocritical affectation.

Now from affectation only, the misfortunes and calamities of life, or the imperfections of nature, may become the objects of ridicule. Surely he hath a very ill-framed mind, who can look on ugliness, infirmity, or poverty, as ridiculous in themselves: nor do I believe any man living, who meets a dirty fellow riding through the streets in a cart, is struck with an idea of the Ridiculous from it; but

if he should see the same figure descend from his coach and fix, or bolt from his chair with his hat under his arm, he would then begin to laugh, and with justice. In the same manner, were we to enter a poor house, and behold a wretched family shivering with cold, and languishing with hunger, it would not incline us to laughter, (at least we must have very diabolical natures if it would): but should we discover there a grate, instead of coals, adorned with flowers, empty plate or china-dishes on the sideboard, or any other affectation of riches and finery either on their persons or in their furniture; we might then indeed be excused for ridiculing so fantastical an appearance. Much less are natural imperfections the object of derision: but when ugliness aims at the applause of beauty, or lameness endeavours to display agility; it is then that these unfortunate circumstances, which at first moved our compassion, tend only to raise our mirth.

The poet carries this very far;

None are, for being what they are, in fault;  
But for not being what they would be thought.

Where, if the metre would suffer the word Ridiculous to close the first line, the thought would be rather more proper. Great vices are

the proper objects of our detestation, smaller faults of our pity : but affectation appears to me the only true source of the Ridiculous.

But perhaps it may be objected to me ; that I have against my own rules introduced vices, and of a very black kind, in this work. To which I shall answer, First, that it is very difficult to pursue a series of human actions, and keep clear from them. Secondly, that the vices to be found here, are rather the accidental consequences of some human frailty or foible, than causes habitually existing in the mind. Thirdly, that they are never set forth as the objects of ridicule, but detestation. Fourthly, that they are never the principal figure at that time on the scene ; and, lastly, they never produce the intended evil.

Having thus distinguished Joseph Andrews from the productions of romance writers on the one hand, and burlesque writers on the other, and given some few very short hints (for I intended no more) of this species of writing, which I have affirmed to be hitherto unattempted in our language ; I shall leave to my good-natured reader to apply my piece to my observations, and will detain him no longer than with a word concerning the characters in this work.

And here I solemnly protest I have no intention to vilify or asperse any one: for though every thing is copied from the book of nature, and scarce a character or action produced which I have not taken from my own observations and experience; yet I have used the utmost care to obscure the persons by such different circumstances, degrees and colours, that it will be impossible to guess at them with any degree of certainty; and if it ever happens otherwise, it is only where the failure characterized is so minute, that it is a foible only which the party himself may laugh at as well as any other.

As to the character of Adams, as it is the most glaring in the whole, so I conceive it is not to be found in any book now extant. It is designed a character of perfect simplicity; and as the goodness of his heart will recommend him to the good-natured; so I hope it will excuse me to the gentlemen of his cloth; for whom, while they are worthy of their sacred order, no man can possibly have a greater respect. They will therefore excuse me, notwithstanding the low adventures in which he is engaged, that I have made him a clergyman; since no other office could have given him so many opportunities of displaying his worthy inclinations.

THE

THE  
HISTORY  
OF THE  
ADVENTURES

OF  
JOSEPH ANDREWS, and his Friend  
Mr. ABRAHAM ADAMS.

BOOK I.

CHAP. I.

*Of writing lives in general, and particularly  
of Pamela; with a word by the bye of  
Colley Cibber, and others,*

IT is a trite but true observation, that  
examples work more forcibly on the mind  
than precepts: And if this be just in what is  
odious and blameable, it is more strongly so  
in what is amiable and praise-worthy. Here  
emulation most effectually operates upon us,  
and inspires our imitation in an irresistible  
manner. A good man therefore is a standing  
lesson to all his acquaintance, and of far



greater use in that narrow circle than a good book.

But, as it often happens, that the best men are but little known, and consequently cannot extend the usefulness of their examples a great way; the writer may be called in aid to spread their history farther, and to present the amiable pictures to those who have not the happiness of knowing the originals; and so, by communicating such valuable patterns to the world, he may, perhaps, do a more extensive service to mankind, than the person whose life originally afforded the pattern.

In this light I have always regarded those biographers, who have recorded the actions of great and worthy persons of both sexes. Not to mention those ancient writers, which of late days are little read, being written in obsolete, and, as they are generally thought, unintelligible languages, such as Plutarch, Nepos, and others which I heard of in my youth; our own language affords many of excellent use and instruction, finely calculated to sow the seeds of virtue in youth, and very easy to be comprehended by persons of moderate capacity. Such are the History of John the Great, who, by his brave and heroic actions against men of large and athletic bodies, obtained the glorious appellation of the Giant-killer; that of an Earl of Warwick, whose Christian name was Guy; the Lives of Argalus and Parthenia, and, above all, the



History of those seven worthy personages, the Champions of Christendom. In all these, delight is mixed with instruction, and the reader is almost as much improved as entertained.

But I pass by these and many others, to mention two books lately published, which represent an admirable pattern of the amiable in either sex. The former of these, which deals in male virtue, was written by the great person himself, who lived the life he hath recorded, and is by many thought to have lived such a life, only in order to write it. The other is communicated to us by an historian who borrows his lights, as the common method is, from authentic papers and records. The reader, I believe, already conjectures, I mean the *Lives of Mr. Colley Cibber*, and of *Mrs. Pamela Andrews*. How artfully doth the former, by insinuating that he escaped being promoted to the highest stations in church and state, teach us a contempt of worldly grandeur! how strongly doth he inculcate an absolute submission to our superiors! lastly, how completely doth he arm us against so uneasy, so wretched a passion as the fear of shame! how clearly doth he expose the emptiness and vanity of that phantom, reputation!

What the female readers are taught by the *Memoirs of Mrs. Andrews*, is so well set forth in the excellent essays or letters prefixed to the second and subsequent editions of that

## 4      THE ADVENTURES OF

work, that it would be here a needless repetition. The authentic history, with which I now present the public, is an instance of the great good that book is likely to do, and of the prevalence of example which I have just observed; since it will appear, that it was by keeping the excellent pattern of his sister's virtues before his eyes, that Mr. Joseph Andrews was chiefly enabled to preserve his purity in the midst of such great temptations. I shall only add, that this character of male-chastity, though doubtless as desirable, and becoming in one part of the human species, as in the other, is almost the only virtue, which the great apologist hath not given himself for the sake of giving the example to his readers.

### CHAP. II.

*Of Mr. Joseph Andrews, his birth, parentage, education, and great endowments, with a word or two concerning ancestors.*

MR Joseph Andrews, the hero of our ensuing history, was esteemed to be the only son of Gaffar and Gammar Andrews, and brother to the illustrious Pamela, whose virtue is at present so famous. As to his ancestors, we have searched with great diligence, but little success; being unable to trace them farther

JOSEPH ANDREWS, &c.

than his great grandfather, who, as an elderly person in the parish remembers to have heard his father say, was an excellent cudgel-player. Whether he had any ancestors before this, we must leave to the opinion of our curious reader, finding nothing of sufficient certainty to rely on. However, we cannot omit inserting an epitaph, which an ingenious friend of ours hath communicated.

*Stay, traveller, for underneath this pew  
Lies fast asleep that merry man Andrew;  
When the last day's great sun shall gild the skies,  
Then he shall from his tomb get up and rise.  
Be merry while thou can'st: for surely thou,  
Shall shortly be as sad as he is now.*

The words are almost out of the stone with antiquity. But it is needless to observe, that Andrew here is writ without an s, and is besides a Christian name. My friend moreover conjectures this to have been the founder of that sect of laughing philosophers, since called Merry Andrews.

To wave therefore a circumstance, which, though mentioned in conformity to the exact rules of biography, is not greatly material; I proceed to things of more consequence. Indeed it is sufficiently certain, that he had as many ancestors as the best man living; and perhaps, if we look five or six hundred years

backwards, might be related to some person of very great figure at present, whose ancestors within half the last century are buried in as great obscurity. But suppose, for argument's sake, we should admit that he had no ancestors at all, but had sprung up, according to the modern phrase, out of a dunghill, as the Athenians pretended they themselves did from the earth, would not this *autokopros* (a) have been justly entitled to all the praise arising from his own virtues? Would it not be hard, that a man who hath no ancestors, should therefore be rendered incapable of acquiring honour; when we see so many who have no virtues, enjoying the honour of their forefathers? At ten years old (by which time his education was advanced to writing and reading) he was bound an apprentice, according to the statute, to Sir Thomas Booby, an uncle of Mr. Booby's by the father's side. Sir Thomas having then an estate in his own hands, the young Andrews was at first employed in what in the country they call keeping birds. His office was to perform the part the ancients assigned to the god Priapus, which deity the moderns call by the name of Jack-o'-Lent: but his voice being so extremely musical that it rather allured the birds than terrified them, he was soon transplanted from the fields into the dog-kennel,

(a) In English. *Sprung from a dunghill.*

JOSEPH ANDREWS, &c.

where he was placed under the huntsman; and made what sportsmen term a Whipper-in. For this place likewise the sweetness of his voice disqualified him; the dogs preferring the melody of his chiding to all the alluring notes of the huntsman, who soon became so incensed at it, that he desired Sir Thomas to provide otherwise for him; and constantly laid every fault the dogs were at, to the account of the poor boy, who was now transplanted to the stable. Here he soon gave proofs of strength and agility beyond his years, and constantly rode the most spirited and vicious horses to water, with an intrepidity which surprised every one. While he was in this station, he rode several races for Sir Thomas, and this with such expertness and success, that the neighbouring gentlemen frequently solicited the knight to permit little Joey (for so he was called) to ride their matches. The best gamesters, before they laid money, always enquired which horse little Joey was to ride, and the bets were rather proportioned by the rider than by the horse himself; especially after he had scornfully refused a considerable bribe to play booty on such an occasion. This extremely raised his character, and so pleased the lady Booby, that she desired to have him (being now seventeen years of age) for her own foot-boy.

Joey was now preferred from the stable to attend on his lady, to go on her errands;

## T      The ADVENTURES of

stand behind her chair, wait at her tea-table; and carry her prayer-book to church; at which place his voice gave him an opportunity of distinguishing himself, by singing psalms: he behaved likewise in every other respect so well at divine service, that it recommended him to the notice of Mr. Abraham Adams the curate; who took an opportunity one day, as he was drinking a cup of ale in Sir Thomas's kitchen, to ask the young man several questions concerning religion, with his answers to which he was wonderfully pleased.

## C H A P. I I I.

*Of Mr. Abraham Adams the curate, Mrs. Slipsho the chambermaid, and others.*

**M**R. Abraham Adams was an excellent scholar. He was a perfect master of the Greek and Latin languages; to which he added a great share of knowledge in the oriental tongues, and could read and translate French, Italian, and Spanish. He had applied many years to the most severe study, and had treasured up a fund of learning rarely to be met with in an university. He was besides a man of good sense, good parts, and good nature; but was at the same time as entirely ignorant of the ways of this world, as an infant just en-

tered into it could possibly be. As he had never any intention to deceive, so he never suspected such a design in others. He was generous, friendly, and brave to an excess; but simplicity was his characteristic. He did no more than Mr. Colley Cibber, apprehend any such passions as malice and envy to exist in mankind, which was indeed less remarkable in a country parson than in a gentleman who has past his life behind the scenes, a place which hath been seldom thought the school of innocence; and where a very little observation would have convinced the great apologist, that those passions have a real existence in the human mind.

His virtue and his other qualifications, as they rendered him equal to his office, so they made him an agreeable and valuable companion; and had so much endeared and well commended him to a bishop, that at the age of fifty, he was provided with a handsome income of 23 pounds a year; which, however, he could not make any great figure with; because he lived in a dear country, and was a little incumbered with a wife and six children.

It was this gentleman, who having, as I have said, observed the singular devotion of young Andrews, had found means to question him concerning several particulars; as, how many books there were in the New Testament? which were they? how many chapters they contained? and such like; to all



to            The ADVENTURES of  
which, Mr. Adams privately said, he answered much better than Sir Thomas, or two other neighbouring justices of the peace, could probably have done.

Mr. Adams was wonderfully solicitous to know at what time, and by what opportunity, the youth became acquainted with these matters. Joey told him, that he had very early learnt to read and write by the goodness of his father, who, though he had not interest enough to get him into a charity-school, because a cousin of his father's landlord did not vote on the right side for a church-warden in a borough-town, yet had been himself at the expence of six-pence a week for his learning: that, ever since he was in Sir Thomas's family, he had employed all his hours of leisure in reading good books: that he had read the Bible, the Whole Duty of Man, and Thomas a Kempis; and that as often as he could, without being perceived, he had studied a great good book which lay open in the hall-window, where he had read, *as how the devil carried away half a church in sermon-time, without hurting one of the congregation: and as how a field of corn ran away down a hill with all the trees upon it, and covered another man's meadow.* This sufficiently assured Mr. Adams, that the good book meant could be no other than Baker's Chronicle.

The curate, surprized to find such instances



Of industry and application in a young man; who had never met with the least encouragement, asked him, if he did not extremely regret the want of a liberal education, and the not having been born of parents who might have indulged his talents and desire of knowledge? to which he answered, « He  
 « hoped he had profited somewhat better from  
 « the books he had read, than to lament his  
 « condition in this world: that, for his part,  
 « he was perfectly content with the state to  
 « which he was called: that he should endeavour to improve his talent, which was all  
 « required of him, but not repine at his own  
 « lot, nor envy those of his betters.» « well  
 « said, my lad, » replied the curate, « and I  
 « wish some who have read many more good  
 « books, nay, and some who have written  
 « good books themselves, had profited so  
 « much by them.»

Adams had no nearer access to Sir Thomas or my lady than through the waiting gentlewoman; for Sir Thomas was too apt to estimate men merely by their dress or fortune; and my lady was a woman of gaiety, who had been blessed with a town education, and never spoke of any of her country neighbours by any other appellation than that of *Brutes*. They both regarded the curate as a kind of domestic only; belonging to the parson of the parish, who was at this time at variance with the knight; for the parson had for many years lived in a constant

state of civil war, or, which is, perhaps, as bad, of civil law, with Sir Thomas himself and the tenants of his manor. The foundation of this quarrel was a *modus*, by setting which aside, an advantage of several shillings *per annum* would have accrued to the rector: but he had not yet been able to accomplish his purpose, and had reaped hitherto nothing better from the suits than the pleasure (which he used indeed frequently to say was no small one) of reflecting that he had utterly undone many of the poor tenants, though he had at the same time greatly impoverished himself.

Mrs. Slipshod the waiting gentlewoman, being herself the daughter of a curate, preserved some respect for Adams; she professed great regard for his learning, and would frequently dispute with him on points of theology; but always insisted on a deference to be paid to her understanding, as she had been frequently at London, and knew more of the world than a country parson could pretend to.

She had, in these disputes, a particular advantage over Adams; for she was a mighty affecter of hard words, which she used in such a manner, that the parson, who durst not offend her by calling her words in question, was frequently at some loss to guess her meaning, and would have been much less puzzled by an Arabian manuscript.

Adams therefore took an opportunity one day, after a pretty long discourse with her on

the essence, ( or, as she pleased to term it, the *incence* ) of matter, to mention the case of young Andrews, desiring her to recommend him to her lady as a youth very susceptible of learning, and one whose instruction in Latin he would himself undertake; by which means he might be qualified for a higher station than that of footman: and added, she knew it was in his master's power easily to provide for him in a better manner. He therefore desired that the boy might be left behind under his care.

« La, Mr. Adams, said Mrs. Slipslop, do  
 « you think my lady will suffer any pream-  
 « bles about any such matter? She is going to  
 « London very *concisely*, and I am *confidous*  
 « would not leave *Joey* behind her on any  
 « account; for he is one of the genteelest  
 « young fellows you may see in a summer's  
 « day, and I am *confidous* she would as soon  
 « think of parting with a pair of her grey  
 « mares; for she values herself as much on  
 « one as the other. » Adams would have in-  
 « terrupted, but she proceeded: « And why is  
 « Latin more *necessitous* for a footman than a  
 « gentleman? It is very proper that you cler-  
 « gymen must learn it, because you can't  
 « preach without it; but I have heard gentle-  
 « men say, in London, that it is fit for no  
 « body else. I am *confidous* my lady would be  
 « angry with me for mentioning it; and I  
 « shall draw myself into no such *delemy*. » At  
 which words her lady's bell rung, and Mr.

Adams was forced to retire; nor could he gain a second opportunity with her before their London journey, which happened a few days afterwards. However, Andrews behaved very thankfully and gratefully to him for his intended kindness, which he told him he never would forget, and at the same time received from the good man many admonitions, concerning the regulation of his future conduct, and his perseverance in innocence and industry.

CHAP. IV.

*What happened after their journey to London.*

NO sooner was young Andrews arrived at London, than he began to scrape an acquaintance with his party-colour'd brethren, who endeavoured to make him despise his former course of life. His hair was cut after the newest fashion, and became his chief care. He went abroad with it all the morning in papers, and drest it out in the afternoon. They could not, however, teach him to game, swear, drink, nor any other genteel vice the town abounded with. He applied most of his leisure hours to music, in which he greatly improved himself; and became so perfect a connoisseur in that art, that he led the opinion of all the other footmen at an opera, and they never condemned or applauded a single song contrary to his approbation.

or dislike. He was a little too forward in riots at the play-houses and assemblies; and when he attended his lady at church (which was but seldom) he behaved with less seeming devotion than formerly: However, if he was outwardly a pretty fellow, his morals remained entirely uncorrupted, though he was at the same time smarter and genteeler than any of the beaux in town, either in or out of livery.

His lady, who had often said of him, that Joey was the handsomest and genteelest footman in the kingdom, but that it was pity he wanted spirit, began now to find that fault no longer; on the contrary, she was frequently heard to cry out, *Ay, there is some life in this fellow*. She plainly saw the effects which the town-air hath on the soberest constitutions. She would now walk out with him into Hyde-Park in a morning, and when tired, which happened almost every minute, would lean on his arm, and converse with him in great familiarity. Whenever she stepped out of her coach, she would take him by the hand, and sometimes, for fear of stumbling, press it very hard; she admitted him to deliver messages at her bed-side in a morning, leer'd at him at table, and indulged him in all those innocent freedoms, which women of figure may permit without the least sully of their virtue.

But though their virtue remains unsullied, yet

now and then some small arrows will glance on the shadow of it, their reputation; and so it fell out to lady Booby, who happened to be walking arm in arm with Joey one morning in Hyde-Park, when lady Tittle and lady Tattle came accidentally by in their coach. « Bless me, » says lady Tittle, « can I believe my eyes? Is that lady Booby? » « Surely, » says Tattle. « But what makes you surprised? » « Why? is not that her footman » replied Tittle? At which Tattle laughed and cried, « An old business, I assure you, is it possible you should not have heard it? The whole town hath known it this half year. » The consequence of this interview was a whisper through a hundred visits which were separately performed by the two ladies (a) the same afternoon, and might have had a mischievous effect, had it not been stopt by two fresh reputations which were published the day afterwards, and engrossed the whole talk of the town.

But whatever opinion or suspicion the scandalous inclination of defamers might entertain of lady Booby's innocent freedoms, it is certain they made no impression on young Andrews, who never offered to en-

(a) It may seem an absurdity that Tattle should visit, as she actually did, to spread a known scandal: But the reader may reconcile this, by supposing with me, that, notwithstanding what she says, this was her first acquaintance with it.

croach beyond the liberties which his lady allowed him. A behaviour which she imputed to the violent respect he preserved for her, and which served only to heighten a something she began to conceive, and which the next chapter will open a little farther.

## C H A P. V.

*The death of Sir Thomas Booby, with the affectionate and mournful behaviour of his widow, and the great purity of Joseph Andrews.*

AT this time, an accident happened, which put a stop to those agreeable walks, which probably would have soon puffed up the cheeks of Fame, and caused her to blow her brazen trumpet through the town; and this was no other than the death of Sir Thomas Booby, who, departing this life, left his disconsolate lady confined to her house, as closely as if she herself had been attacked by some violent disease. During the first six days the poor lady admitted none but Mrs. Slipslop, and three female friends, who made a party at cards: but on the seventh she ordered Joey, whom, for a good reason, we shall hereafter call JOSEPH, to bring up her teakettle. The lady being in bed, called Joseph to her, bade him sit down, and having accidentally laid her hand on his, she asked him, *If he had ever been in love?* Joseph answer-



ed, with some confusion, «It was time  
«enough for one so young as himself to  
«think on such things». «As young as you  
«are,» reply'd the lady, «I am convinced you  
«are no stranger to that passion. Come Joey,»  
says she, «tell me truly, who is the happy  
«girl whose eyes have made a conquest of  
«you?» Joseph returned, «That all the women  
«he had ever seen, were equally indifferent  
«to him.» «O then,» said the lady, «you  
«are a general lover. Indeed, you handsome  
«fellows, like handsome women, are very  
«long and difficult in fixing: but yet you  
«shall never persuade me that your heart is  
«so insusceptible of affection: I rather im-  
«pute what you say to your secrecy, a very  
«commendable quality, and what I am far  
«from being angry with you for. Nothing  
«can be more unworthy in a young man than  
«to betray any intimacies with the ladies.»  
«Ladies! Madam,» said Joseph, «I am sure I  
«never had the impudence to think of any that  
«deserve that name.» «Don't pretend to too  
«much modesty,» said she, «for that someti-  
«mes may be impertinent: but pray, answer  
«me this question. Suppose a lady should  
«happen to like you; suppose she should  
«prefer you to all your sex, and admit you  
«to the same familiarities as you might have  
«hoped for, if you had been born her equal,  
«are you certain that no vanity could tempt  
«you to discover her? Answer me honestly,



« Joseph. Have you so much more sense, and  
 « so much more virtue, than, you handsome  
 « young fellows, generally have, who make  
 « no scruple of sacrificing our dear reputa-  
 « tion to your pride, without considering  
 « the great obligation we lay on you, by our  
 « condescension and confidence? Can you  
 « keep a secret, my Joey?» « Madam?» says  
 « he, « I hope your ladyship can't tax me  
 « with ever betraying the secrets of the fa-  
 « mily; and I hope, if you was to turn me  
 « away, I might have that character of you.»  
 « I don't intend to turn you away, Joey,»  
 said she, and sigh'd, « I am afraid it is not in  
 « my power.» She then raised herself a little  
 in her bed, and discovered one of the whit-  
 est necks that ever was seen; at which Jo-  
 seph blushed. « La!» says she, in an affected  
 « surprise, « what am I doing? I have trusted  
 « myself with a man alone, naked in bed;  
 « suppose you should have any wicked in-  
 « tentions upon my honour, how should I de-  
 « fend myself?» Joseph protested that he ne-  
 ver had the least evil design against her.  
 « No,» says she, « perhaps you may not call  
 « your designs wicked, and perhaps they  
 « are not so» — He swore they were not.  
 « You misunderstand me,» says she « I mean  
 « if they were against my honour, they may  
 « not be wicked, but the world calls them so.  
 « But then, say you, the world will never  
 « know any thing of the matter, yet would

20      THE ADVENTURES OF

« not that be trusting to your secrecy? Must  
 « not my reputation be then in your power?  
 « Would you not then be my master?» Joseph  
 begged her ladyship to be comforted; for  
 that he would never imagine the least wicked  
 thing against her, and that he had rather  
 die a thousand deaths, than give her any reason  
 to suspect him, « Yes, » says she, « I  
 « must have reason to suspect you. Are you  
 « not a man? and without vanity I may pre-  
 « tend to some charms. But perhaps you may  
 « fear I should prosecute you; indeed I hope  
 « you do; and yet heaven knows I should  
 « never have the confidence to appear before a  
 « court of justice; and you know, Joey, I  
 « am of a forgiving temper. Tell me, Joey,  
 « don't you think I should forgive you?»  
 « Indeed, Madam, » says Joseph, « I will  
 « never do any thing to disoblige your lady-  
 « ship, » « How, » says she « do you think  
 « it would not disoblige me then? Do you  
 « think I would willingly suffer you? » « I  
 « don't understand you, Madam, » said Jo-  
 « seph, « Don't you, » said she, « then you  
 « either are a fool, or pretend to be so; I  
 « find I was mistaken in you; so get you  
 « down stairs, and never let me see your face  
 « again: Your pretended innocence cannot  
 « impose on me. » « Madam, » said Joseph, « I  
 « would not have your ladyship think any  
 « evil of me. I have always endeavoured to  
 « be a dutiful servant both to you and my

“ master. ” “ O thou villain, ” answered my lady, “ Why didst thou mention the name of that dear man, unless to torment me, to bring his precious memory to my mind, ” ( and then she burst into a fit of tears ). “ Get thee from my sight, I shall never endure thee more. ” At which words she turned away from him; and Joseph retreated from the room in a most disconsolate condition, and writ that letter the reader will find in the next chapter.

## C H A P. V I.

*How Joseph Andrews writ a letter to his sister Pamela.*

To Mrs. Pamela Andrews, living with Squire Booby.

“ Dear Sister,

“ SINCE I received your letter of your good lady’s death, we have had a misfortune of the same kind in our family. My worthy master, Sir Thomas, died about four days ago; and, what is worse, my poor lady is certainly gone distracted. None of the servants expected her to take it so to heart, because they quarrelled almost every day of their lives: but no more of that; because you know, Pamela, I never loved to tell the secrets of my master’s family; but to be sure you must have known

« they never loved one another; and I have  
 « heard her ladyship wish his honour dead  
 « above a thousand times: but no body  
 « knows what it is to lose a friend till they  
 « have lost him.

« Don't tell any body what I write, be-  
 « cause I should not care to have folks say  
 « I discover what passes in our family: but if  
 « it had not been so great a lady, I should  
 « have thought she had had a mind to me.  
 « Dear Pamela, don't tell any body; but she  
 « ordered me to sit down by her bed-side,  
 « when she was in naked bed; and she held  
 « my hand, and talked exactly as a lady does  
 « to her sweet-heart in a stage play, which I  
 « have seen in Covent-Garden, while she  
 « wanted him to be no better than he should be.

« If Madam be mad, I shall not care for  
 « staying long in the family; so I heartily  
 « wish you could get me a place either at the  
 « Squire's, or some other neighbouring gent-  
 « leman's; unless it be true that you are  
 « going to be married to parson Williams,  
 « as folks talk, and then I should be very  
 « willing to be his clerk; for which you  
 « know I am qualified, being able to read,  
 « and to set a psalm.

« I fancy I shall be discharged very soon;  
 « and the moment I am, unless I hear from  
 « you, I shall return to my old master's coun-  
 « try-seat, if it be only to see parson Adams,  
 « who is the best man in the world, London

is a bad place, and there is so little good-fellowship, that the next-door neighbours don't know one another. Pray, give my service to all friends that inquire for me; so I rest

Your loving brother,

JOSEPH ANDREWS.

As soon as Joseph had sealed and directed this letter, he walked down stairs, where he met Mrs. Slipslop, with whom we shall take this opportunity to bring the reader a little better acquainted. She was a maiden gentlewoman of about forty-five years of age, who having made a small slip in her youth, had continued a good maid ever since. She was not at this time remarkably handsome; being very short, and rather too corpulent in body, and somewhat red, with the addition of pimples in the face. Her nose was likewise rather too large, and her eyes too little; nor did she resemble a cow so much in her breath, as in two brown globes which she carried before her; one of her legs was also a little shorter than the other, which occasioned her to limp as she walked. This fair creature had long cast the eyes of affection on Joseph, in which she had not met with quite so good success as she probably wished, though, besides the allurements of her native charms, she had given him tea, sweetmeats, wine, and many other delicacies,

of which, by keeping the keys, she had the absolute command. Joseph, however, had not returned the least gratitude to all these favours, not even so much as a kiss; though I would not insinuate she was so easily to be satisfied; for surely then he would have been highly blameable. The truth is, she was arrived at an age, when she thought she might indulge herself in any liberties with a man, without the danger of bringing a third person into the world to betray them. She imagined, that by so long a self-denial, she had not only made amends for the small slip of her youth above hinted at; but had likewise laid up a quantity of merit to excuse any future failings. In a word, she resolved to give a loose to her amorous inclinations, and to pay off the debt of pleasure which she found she owed herself, as fast as possible:

With these charms of person, and in this disposition of mind, she encountered poor Joseph at the bottom of the stairs, and asked him if he would drink a glass of something good this morning. Joseph, whose spirits were not a little cast down, very readily and thankfully accepted the offer; and together they went into a closet, where having delivered him a full glass of ratafia, and desired him to sit down, Mrs. Slipslop thus began.

« Sure nothing can be a more simple *con-*  
*a tract* in a woman, than to place her affec-  
*a tions* on a boy. If I had ever thought it  
 « would

« would have been my fate, I should have  
 « wished to die a thousand deaths rather than  
 « live to see that day. If we like a man, the  
 « lightest hint *sophisticates*. Whereas a boy  
 « proposes upon us to break through all the  
 « regulations of modesty, before we can  
 « make any oppression upon him. » Joseph,  
 who did not understand a word she said, an-  
 swered, « Yes, Madam; » — « Yes, Madam ! »  
 reply'd Mrs. Slipslop, with some warmth,  
 « do you intend to *result* my passion ? Is it  
 « not enough, ungrateful as you are, to  
 « make no return to all the favours I have  
 « done you ; but you must treat me with *iro-*  
 « *ning* ? Barbarous monster ! how have I de-  
 « served that my passion should be *resulted*  
 « and treated with *ironing* ? » « Madam ; »  
 answered Joseph, « I don't understand your  
 « hard words ; but I am certain you have no  
 « occasion to call me ungrateful : for so far  
 « from intending you any wrong, I have  
 « always loved you as well as if you had been  
 « my own mother. » « How, Sirrah ! » says  
 Mrs. Slipslop, in a rage ; « your own mo-  
 « ther ! Do you *assinnate* that I am old enough  
 « to be your mother ? I don't know what a  
 « stripling may think ; but I believe a man  
 « would refer me to any green-sickness silly  
 « girl *whatsomdever* : But I ought to despise  
 « you rather than be angry with you, for  
 « referring the conversation of girls to that  
 « of a woman of sense. » « Madam, » says



Joseph, « I am sure I have always valued  
« the honour you did me by your conversa-  
« tion ; for I know you are a woman of lear-  
« ning. » « Yes, but, Joseph, » said she, a  
little softened by the compliment to her learn-  
ing, « If you had a value for me, you cer-  
« tainly would have found some method of  
« shewing it me ; for I am *convicted* you  
« must see the value I have for you. Yes, Jo-  
« seph, my eyes, whether I would or no,  
« must have declared a passion I cannot con-  
« quer. — Oh ! Joseph ! »

As when a hungry tygress, who long has  
traversed the woods in fruitless search, sees,  
within the reach of her claws, a lamb, she pre-  
pares to leap on her prey ; or as a voracious  
pike, of immense size, surveys, through the  
liquid element, a roach or gudgeon which  
cannot escape her jaws, opens them wide to  
swallow the little fish ; so did Mrs. Slipslop  
prepare to lay her violent amorous hands on  
poor Joseph, when luckily her mistress's bell  
rung, and delivered the intended martyr from  
her clutches. She was obliged to leave him  
abruptly, and to defer the execution of her  
purpose till some other time. We shall therefore  
return to the Lady Booby, and give our rea-  
der some account of her behaviour, after  
she was left by Joseph in a temper of mind  
not greatly different from that of the inflamed  
Slipslop.

## CHAP. VII.

*Sayings of wise men. A dialogue between the lady and her maid; and a panegyric, or rather satire, on the passion of love, in the sublime style.*

IT is the observation of some ancient sage, whose name I have forgot, that passions operate differently on the human mind, as diseases on the body, in proportion to the strength or weakness, soundness or rottenness of the one and the other.

We hope, therefore, a judicious reader will give himself some pains to observe, what we have so greatly laboured to describe, the different operations of this passion of love, in the gentle and cultivated mind of the lady Booby, from those which it effected in the less polished and coarser disposition of Mrs. Slipslop.

Another philosopher, whose name also at present escapes my memory, hath somewhere said, that resolutions taken in the absence of the beloved object, are very apt to vanish in its presence; on both which wise sayings the following chapter may serve as a comment.

No sooner had Joseph left the room in the manner we had before related, than the lady,

enraged at her disappointment, began to reflect with severity on her conduct. Her love was now changed to disdain, which pride assisted to torment her. She despised herself for the meanness of her passion, and Joseph for its ill success. However, she had now got the better of it in her own opinion, and determined immediately to dismiss the object. After much tossing and turning in her bed, and many soliloquies, which, if we had no better matter for our reader, we would give him; she at last rung the bell as above mentioned, and was presently attended by Mrs. Slipslop, who was not much better pleased with Joseph than the lady herself.

« Slipslop, » said lady Booby, « when did you see Joseph? » The poor woman was so surprised at the unexpected sound of this name, at so critical a time, that she had the greatest difficulty to conceal the confusion she was under, from her mistress; whom she answered, nevertheless, with pretty good confidence, though not entirely void of fear of suspicion, that she had not seen him that morning. « I am afraid, » said lady Booby, « he is a wild young fellow. » « That he is, » said Slipslop, « and a wicked one too. » « To my knowledge he games, drinks, » « swears, and fights eternally. Besides, he » « is horribly indicted to wenching. » « Ay! » « said the lady, « I never heard that of him. »

« O Madam, » answered the other, « he is  
 « so lewd a rascal, that if your ladyship keeps  
 « him much longer, you will not have one  
 « virgin in your house, except myself. And  
 « yet I can't conceive what the wenches see  
 « in him, to be so foolishly fond as they are;  
 « in my eyes he is as ugly a scarecrow as I  
 « ever *upheld*. » « Nay », said the lady, « the  
 « boy is well enough. » — « La Ma'am, »  
 cries Sliplop, « I think him the *ragmatical*-  
 « *left* fellow in the family. » « Sure, Slip-  
 « lop, » says she, « you are mistaken: But  
 « which of the women do you most sus-  
 « pect? » « Madam, » says Sliplop, « there is  
 « Betty the Chamber-maid, I am almost *con-*  
 « *victed*, is with child by him. » « Ay! » says  
 the lady, « then, pray, pay her her wages  
 « instantly; I will keep no such sluts in my  
 « family. And as for Joseph, you may dis-  
 « card him too. » « Would your ladyship  
 « have him paid off immediately? » cries  
 Sliplop, « for, perhaps, when Betty is  
 « gone, he may mend; and really the boy is  
 « a good servant, and a strong, healthy, *use-*  
 « *ful* boy enough. » « This morning, »  
 answered the lady with some vehemence. « I  
 « wish, Madam, » cries Sliplop, « your la-  
 « dyship would be so good as to try him a  
 « little longer. » « I will not have my com-  
 « mands disputed, » said the lady, « sure you  
 « are not fond of him yourself. » « I, Ma-  
 « dam! » cries Sliplop, reddening, if not

blushing, «I should be sorry to think your  
«ladyship had any reason to *respect* me of  
«fondness for a fellow; and if it be your  
«pleasure, I shall fulfil it with as much *re-*  
«*luctance* as possible.» «As little, I sup-  
«pose you mean,» said the lady, «and so  
«about it instantly.» Mrs. Slipslop went out,  
and the lady had scarce taken two turns be-  
fore she fell to knocking and ringing with  
great violence. Slipslop, who did not travel  
post-haste, soon returned, and was counter-  
manded as to Joseph, but ordered to send  
Betty about her business without delay. She  
went out a second time with much greater ala-  
cridty than before; when the lady began im-  
mediately to accuse herself of want of reso-  
lution, and to apprehend the return of her  
affection with its pernicious consequences:  
She therefore applied herself again to the  
bell, and resummoned Mrs. Slipslop into her  
presence; who again returned, and was told  
by her mistress, that she had considered bet-  
ter of the matter, and was absolutely re-  
solved to turn away Joseph; which she ordered  
her to do immediately. Slipslop, who knew  
the violence of her lady's temper, and would  
not venture her place for any Adonis or Her-  
cules in the universe, left her a third time;  
which she had no sooner done, than the little  
god Cupid, fearing he had not yet done the  
lady's business, took a fresh arrow with the  
sharpest point out of his quiver, and shot it

directly into her heart : In other and plainer language, the lady's passion got the better of her reason. She called back Slipslop once more, and told her, she had resolved to see the boy, and examine him herself; therefore bid her send him up. This wavering in her mistress's temper probably put something into the waiting gentlewoman's head, not necessary to mention to the sagacious reader.

Lady Booby was going to call her back again, but could not prevail with herself. The next consideration, therefore, was, how she should behave to Joseph when he came in. She resolved to preserve all the dignity of the woman of fashion to her servant, and to indulge herself in this last view of Joseph (for that she was most certainly resolved it should be), at his own expence, by first insulting and then discarding him.

O Love, what monstrous tricks dost thou play with thy votaries of both sexes ! how dost thou deceive them, and make them deceive themselves ! Their follies are thy delight ! Their sighs make thee laugh, and their pangs are thy merriment !

Not the great Rich, who turns men into monkeys, wheelbarrows, and whatever else best humours his fancy, hath so strangely metamorphosed the human shape ; nor the great Cibber, who confounds all number, gender, and breaks through every rule of grammar at his will, hath so distorted the English lan-

guage, as thou dost metamorphose and distort the human senses.

Thou puttest out our eyes, stoppest up our ears, and takest away the power of our nostrils; so that we can neither see the largest object, hear the loudest noise, nor smell the most poignant perfume. Again, when thou pleasest, thou canst make a mole-hill appear as a mountain; a Jew's harp sound like a trumpet; and a daizy sinell like a violet. Thou canst make cowardice brave, avarice generous, pride humble, and cruelty tender-hearted. In short, thou turnest the heart of man inside out, as a juggler doth a petticoat, and bringest whatsoever pleaseth thee out from it. If there be any one who doubts all this, let him read the next chapter.

## CHAP. VIII.

*In which, after some very fine writing, the history goes on, and relates the interview between the lady and Joseph; where the latter hath set an example which we despair of seeing followed by his sex, in this vicious age.*

**N**OW the rake Hesperus had called for his breeches, and having well rubbed his drowsy eyes, prepared to dress himself for all night; by whose example his brother rakes



on earth likewise leave those beds in which they had slept away the day. Now Thetis, the good housewife, began to put on her pot, in order to regale the good man Phœbus after his daily labours were over. In vulgar language, it was in the evening when Joseph attended his lady's orders.

But as it becomes us to preserve the character of this lady, who is the heroine of our tale; and as we have naturally a wonderful tenderness for that beautiful part of the human species, called the fair sex; before we discover too much of her frailty to our reader, it will be proper to give him a lively idea of the vast temptation, which overcame all the efforts of a modest and virtuous mind; and then we humbly hope his good-nature will rather pity than condemn the imperfection of human virtue.

Nay, the ladies themselves will, we hope, be induced, by considering the uncommon variety of charms which united in this young man's person, to bridle their rampant passion for chastity, and be at least as mild as their violent modesty and virtue will permit them, in censuring the conduct of a woman, who, perhaps, was in her own disposition as chaste as those pure and sanctified virgins, who, after a life innocently spent in the gaieties of the town, begin about fifty to attend twice *per diem*, at the polite churches and chapels, to return thanks for the grace which

preserved them formerly, amongst beasts, from temptations, perhaps less powerful than what now attacked the Lady Booby.

Mr. Joseph Andrews was now in the one and twentieth year of his age. He was of the highest degree of middle stature. His limbs were put together with great elegance and no less strength. His legs and thighs were formed in the exactest proportion. His shoulders were broad and brawny, but yet his arms hung so easily, that he had all the symptoms of strength without the least clumsiness. His hair was of a nut-brown colour, and was displayed in wanton ringlets down his back. His forehead was high, his eyes dark, and as full of sweetness as of fire. His nose a little inclined to the Roman. His teeth white and even. His lips full, red, and soft. His beard was only rough on his chin and upper lip; but his cheeks, in which his blood glowed, were overspread with a thick down. His countenance had a tenderness joined with a sensibility inexpressible. Add to this the most perfect neatness in his dress, and an air, which, to those who have not seen many noblemen, would give an idea of nobility.

Such was the person who now appeared before the lady. She viewed him some time in silence, and twice or thrice before she spake, changed her mind as to the manner in which she should begin. At length she

said to him: « Joseph, I am sorry to hear such  
 « complaints against you ; I am told you  
 « behave so rudely to the maids , that they  
 « cannot do their business in quiet ; I mean  
 « those who are not wicked enough to hear-  
 « ken to your solicitations. As to others, they  
 « may perhaps not call you rude : for there  
 « are wicked sluts who make one ashamed of  
 « one's own sex ; and are as ready to admit  
 « any nauseous familiarity , as fellows to offer  
 « it ; nay , there are such in my family ; but  
 « they shall not stay in it ; that impudent trol-  
 « lop, who is with child by you , is discharged  
 « by this time. »

As a person who is struck through the heart  
 with a thunderbolt , looks extremely surpris-  
 ed , nay, and perhaps is so too — thus the poor  
 Joseph received the false accusation of his  
 mistress : he blushed and looked confounded,  
 which she misinterpreted to be symptoms of  
 his guilt , and thus went on :

« Come hither, Joseph : another mistress  
 « might discard you for these offences ; but I  
 « have a compassion for your youth , and if I  
 « could be certain you would be no more  
 « guilty—Consider, child , ( laying her hand  
 « carelessly upon his ) you are a handsome  
 « young fellow , and might do better ; you  
 « might make your fortune »—« Madam, »  
 said Joseph, « I do assure your ladyship, I don't  
 « know whether any maid in the house is man-  
 « or woman. » « Oh fy ! Joseph , answered

the lady, « don't commit another crime in  
« denying the truth. I could pardon the first;  
« but I hate a liar. » « Madam, » cries Joseph,  
« I hope your ladyship will not be offended  
« at my asserting my innocence ; for by all  
« that is sacred, I have never offered more than  
« kissing. » « Kissing ! » said the lady, with great  
discomposure of countenance, and more red-  
ness in her cheeks than anger in her eyes ; « do  
« you call that no crime ? Kissing, Joseph, is  
« as a prologue to a play. Can I believe a  
« young fellow of your age and complexion  
« will be content with kissing ? No, Joseph,  
« there is no woman who grants that, but will  
« grant more ; and I am deceived greatly in  
« you, if you would not put her closely to it.  
« What would you think, Joseph, if I admit-  
« ted you to kiss me ? » Joseph reply'd, « He  
« would sooner die than have any such  
« thought. » « And yet, Joseph, » returned  
she, « ladies have admitted their footmen to  
« such familiarities ; and footmen, I confess to  
« you, much less deserving them ; fellows  
« without half your charms ; for such might  
« almost excuse the crime. Tell me, therefore,  
« Joseph, if I should admit you to such free-  
« dom, what would you think of me ? — tell  
« me freely. » « Madam, » said Joseph, « I  
« should think your ladyship condescended a  
« great deal below yourself. » « Pugh ! » said  
she « that I am to answer to myself. But

« would not you insist on more? Would you  
 « be contented with a kiss? Would not your  
 « inclinations be all on fire rather by such a  
 « favour? » « Madam, » said Joseph, « if they  
 « were, I hope, I should be able to controul  
 « them, without suffering them to get the  
 « better of my virtue. » — You have heard,  
 reader, poets talk of the *Statue of Surprize*;  
 you have heard likewise, or else you have  
 heard very little, how surprize made one of  
 the sons of Cræsus speak, though he was dumb.  
 You have seen the faces in the eighteen-  
 penny gallery, when through the trap-door,  
 to soft or no music, Mr. Bridgewater,  
 Mr. William Mills, or some other of ghostly  
 appearance, hath ascended with a face all pale  
 with powder, and a shirt all bloody with  
 ribbons; but from none of these, nor from  
 Phidias, or Praxiteles, if they should return  
 to life—no, not from the inimitable pencil  
 of my friend Hogarth, could you receive  
 such an idea of surprize, as would have entered  
 in at your eyes, had they beheld the lady  
 Booby, when those last words issued out  
 from the lips of Joseph.—« Your virtue! »  
 (said the lady, recovering after a silence of  
 two minutes) « I shall never survive it. Your  
 « virtue! Intolerable confidence! Have you the  
 « assurance to pretend, that when a lady de-  
 « means herself to throw aside the rules of de-  
 « cency, in order to honour you with the high-  
 « est favour in her power, your virtue should

« resist her inclination? That when she had  
 « conquered her own virtue, she should find  
 « an obstruction in yours? » « Madam, » said  
 Joseph, « I can't see why her having no virtue  
 « should be a reason against my having any:  
 « or why, because I am a man, or because I  
 « am poor, my virtue must be subservient to her  
 « pleasures. » « I am out of patience, » cries  
 the lady: « Did ever mortal hear of a man's  
 « virtue? Did ever the greatest, or the gravest  
 « men pretend to any of this kind? Will ma-  
 « gistrates, who punish lewdness, or parsons  
 « who preach against it, make any scruple  
 « of committing it? And can a boy, a strip-  
 « ling, have the confidence to talk of his  
 « virtue? » « Madam, » says Joseph, « that  
 « boy is the brother of Pamela, and would be  
 « ashamed that the chastity of his family,  
 « which is preserved in her, should be stained  
 « in him. If there are such men as your lady-  
 « ship mentions, I am sorry for it; and I  
 « wish they had an opportunity of reading  
 « over those letters, which my father hath sent  
 « me of my sister Pamela's; nor do I doubt  
 « but such an example would amend them. »  
 « You impudent villain, » cries the lady in a  
 rage, « do you insult me with the follies of  
 « my relation, who hath exposed himself all  
 « over the country upon your sister's account?  
 « A little vixen, whom I have always wonder-  
 « ed my late lady Booby ever kept in her  
 « house. Sirrah! get out of my sight, and

« prepare to set out this night, for I will order  
« you your wages immediately, and you shall  
« be stripped and turned away. »—« Madam, »  
says Joseph. « I am sorry I have offended  
« your ladyship, I am sure I never intended  
« it. » « Yes, Sirrah, » cries she, « you have  
« had the vanity to misconstrue the little in-  
« nocent freedom I took, in order to try  
« whether what I heard was true. O' my  
« conscience ! you have had the assurance to  
« imagine I was fond of you myself. » Joseph  
answered, he had only spoke out of tender-  
ness for his virtue ; at which words she  
flew into a violent passion, and, refusing to  
hear more, ordered him instantly to leave  
the room.

He was no sooner gone than she burst forth  
into the following exclamation ; « Whither  
« doth this violent passion hurry us ? What  
« meannesses do we submit to from its im-  
« pulse ? Wisely we resist its first and least  
« approaches ; for it is then only we can assure  
« ourselves the victory. No woman could  
« ever safely say, *so far only will I go*. Have  
« I not exposed myself to the refusal of my  
« footman ? I cannot bear the reflection. » Upon  
which she applied herself to the bell, and  
rung it with infinite more violence than was  
necessary ; the faithful Slipshod attending near  
at hand : To say the truth, she had conceived  
a suspicion at her last interview with her  
mistress ; and had waited ever since in the



antichamber, having carefully applied her ears to the key-hole during the whole time that the preceding conversation passed between Joseph and the lady.

## CHAP. IX.

*What passed between the lady and Mrs. Slipslop, in which we prophesy there are some strokes which every one will not truly comprehend at the first reading.*

« SLIPSLOP, » said the lady, « I find  
 « too much reason to believe all thou hast  
 « told me of this wicked Joseph; I have  
 « determined to part with him instantly;  
 « so go you to the steward, and bid him  
 « pay him his wages. » Slipslop, who had  
 preserved hitherto a distance to her lady,  
 rather out of necessity than inclination, and  
 who thought the knowledge of this secret  
 had thrown down all distinction between  
 them, answered her mistress very pertly,  
 « She wished she knew her own mind, and  
 « that she was certain she would call her  
 « back again, before she was got half-way  
 « down stairs. » The lady replied « she  
 « had taken a resolution, and was resolved  
 « to keep it. » « I am sorry for it, » cries  
 Slipslop; « and if I had known you would  
 » have punished the poor lad so severely,  
 » you should never have heard a particle of

the matter. Here's a fuss indeed, about nothing. » « Nothing ! » returned the lady ; « Do you think I will countenance lewdness in my house ? » « If you will turn away every footman, » said Slipslop, « that is a lover of the sport, you must soon open the coach-door yourself, or get a set of *mophradites* to wait upon you ; and I am sure I hated the sight of them even singing in an opera. » « Do as I bid you », says my lady, « and don't shock my ears with your beastly language. » « Marry come up, » cries Slipslop, « people's ears are sometimes the nicest part about them ».

The lady, who began to admire the new style in which her waiting gentlewoman delivered herself, and by the conclusion of her speech, suspected somewhat of the truth, called her back, and desired to know what she meant by the extraordinary degree of freedom in which she thought proper to indulge her tongue. « Freedom ! » says Slipslop, « I don't know what you call freedom, Madam ; servants have tongues as well as their mistresses. » « Yes, and saucy ones too, » answered the lady : « But I assure you I shall bear no such impertinence. » « Impertinence ! I don't know that I am impertinent, » says Slipslop. « Yes indeed you are, » cries my lady ; « and, unless you mend your manners, this house is no place for you. » « Manners ! » cries Slipslop, «

« I never was thought to want manners, nor  
« *modesty* neither ; and for places , there are  
« more places than one ; and I know what  
« I know : » « What do you know , Mistress ? »  
answered the lady. « I am not obliged to  
« tell that to every body , » says Slipslop , «  
« any more than I am obliged to keep it a  
« secret. » « I desire you would provide your-  
« self , » answered the lady. « With all my  
« heart , » replied the waiting gentlewoman ,  
and so departed in a passion , and slapped the  
door after her.

The lady too plainly perceived that her  
waiting gentlewoman knew more than she  
would willingly have had her acquainted  
with ; and this she imputed to Joseph's ha-  
ving discovered to her what past at the first  
interview. This therefore blew up her rage  
against him , and confirmed her in a resolution  
of parting with him.

But the dismissing Mrs. Slipslop , was a  
point not so easily to be resolved upon ; she  
had the utmost tenderness for her reputation ,  
as she knew on that depended many of the  
most valuable blessings of life ; particularly  
cards , making curtsies in public places , and  
above all , the pleasure of demolishing the  
reputations of others , in which innocent  
amusement she had an extraordinary delight.  
She therefore determined to submit to any  
insult from a servant , rather than run a risk  
of losing the title to so many great privileges.

She therefore sent for her steward, Mr. Peter Pounce, and ordered him to pay Joseph his wages, to strip off his livery, and turn him out of the doors that evening.

She then called Slipshod up, and, after refreshing her spirits with a small cordial which she kept in her closet, she began in the following manner :

“ Slipshod, why will you, who know  
 “ my passionate temper, attempt to provoke  
 “ me by your answers? I am convinced you  
 “ are an honest servant, and should be very  
 “ unwilling to part with you. I believe like-  
 “ wise, you have found me an indulgent  
 “ mistress on many occasions, and have as little  
 “ reason, on your side, to desire a chan-  
 “ ge. I can’t help being surpris’d, therefore,  
 “ that you will take the surest method to  
 “ offend me : I mean repeating my words,  
 “ which, you know, I have always detested.”

The prudent waiting gentlewoman had duly weigh’d the whole matter, and found, on mature deliberation, that a good place in possession was better than one in expectation, as she found her mistress therefore inclined to relent, she thought proper also to put on some small condescension ; which was as readily accepted : and so the affair was reconciled, all offences forgiven, and a present of a gown and petticoat made her as an instance of her lady’s future favour.

She offered once or twice to speak in favour of Joseph; but found her lady's heart so obdurate, that she prudently dropt all such efforts. She considered there were more footmen in the house, and some as stout fellows, though not quite so handsome as Joseph; besides, the reader hath already seen her tender advances had not met with that encouragement she might have reasonably expected. She thought she had thrown away a great deal of sack and sweetmeats on an ungrateful rascal; and being a little inclined to the opinion of that female sect, who hold one lusty young fellow to be near as good as another lusty young fellow, she at last gave up Joseph and his cause, and, with a triumph over her passion highly commendable, walked off with her present, and with great tranquillity paid a visit to a stone-bottle which is of sovereign use to a philosophical temper.

She left not her mistress so easy. The poor lady could not reflect without agony, that her dear reputation was in the power of her servants. All her comfort, as to Joseph, was, that she hoped he did not understand her meaning; at least, she could say for herself, she had not plainly expressed any thing to him; and, as to Mrs. Slipshod, she imagined she could bribe her to secrecy.

But what hurt her most was, that in reality she had not so entirely conquered her

passion; the little god lay lurking in her heart, though anger and disdain so hoodwinked her, that she could not see him. She was a thousand times on the very brink of revoking the sentence she had passed against the poor youth. Love became his advocate, and whispered many things in his favour. Honour likewise endeavoured to vindicate his crime, and pity to mitigate his punishment; on the other side, pride and revenge spoke as loudly against him; and thus the poor lady was tortured with perplexity; opposite passions distracting and tearing her mind different ways.

So have I seen, in the hall of Westminster, where serjeant Bramble hath been retained on the right side, and serjeant Puzzle on the left, the balance of opinion (so equal were their fees) alternately incline to either scale. Now Bramble throws in an argument, and Puzzle's scale strikes the beam; again, Bramble shares the like fate, overpowered by the weight of Puzzle. Here Bramble hits, there Puzzle strikes; here one has you, there t'other has you; till at last all becomes one scene of confusion in the tortured minds of the hearers; equal wagers are laid on the success, and neither judge nor jury can possibly make any thing of the matter; all things are so envelopped by the careful serjeants in doubt and obscurity.

Or as it happens in the conscience, where

honour and honesty pull one way, and a bribe and necessity another. — If it was our present business only to make similes, we could produce many more to this purpose: But a simile (as well as a word) to the wise. We shall therefore see a little after our hero, for whom the reader is doubtless in some pain.

## CHAP. X.

*Joseph writes another letter: His transactions with Mr. Peter Pounce, &c. with his departure from lady Booby.*

THE disconsolate Joseph would not have had an understanding sufficient for the principal subject of such a book as this, if he had any longer misunderstood the drift of his mistress; and indeed that he did not discern it sooner, the reader will be pleased to apply to an unwillingness in him to discover what he must condemn in her as a fault. Having therefore quitted her presence, he retired into his own garret, and entered himself into an ejaculation on the numberless calamities which attended beauty, and the misfortune it was to be handsomer than one's neighbours.

He then sat down, and addressed himself to his sister Pamela, in the following words:



» Dear sister Pamela,

HOPING you are well, what news  
« have I to tell you! O Pamela, my mistress  
« is fallen in love with me. — That is,  
« what great folks call falling in love, she  
« has a mind to ruin me; but I hope I shall  
« have more resolution and more grace than  
« to part with my virtue to any lady upon  
« earth.

« Mr. Adams hath often told me, that  
« chastity is as great a virtue in a man as  
« in a woman. He says he never knew any  
« more than his wife, and I shall endeavour  
« to follow his example. Indeed, it is owing  
« entirely to his excellent sermons and advice,  
« together with your letters, that I have been  
« able to resist a temptation, which, he  
« says, no man complies with, but he re-  
« pents in this world, or is damned for it  
« in the next; and why should I trust to  
« repentance on my death-bed, since I may  
« die in my sleep? What fine things are good  
« advice and good examples! but I am glad  
« she turned me out of the chamber as she  
« did: for I had once almost forgotten  
« every word parson Adams had ever said  
« to me.

« I don't doubt, dear sister, but you will  
« have grace to preserve your virtue against  
« all trials; and I beg you earnestly to pray,

« I may be enabled to preserve mine : for  
« truly , it is very severely attacked by more  
« than one ; but , I hope , I shall copy your  
« example , and that of Joseph my name-  
« sake ; and maintain my virtue against all  
« temptations. »

Joseph had not finished his letter , when he was summoned down stairs by Mr. Peter Pounce , to receive his wages : for , besides that out of eight pounds a-year he allowed his father and mother four , he had been obliged , in order to furnish himself with musical instruments , to apply to the generosity of the aforesaid Peter , who , on urgent occasions , used to advance the servants their wages : not before they were due , but before they were payable ; that is , perhaps , half a year after they were due , and this at the moderate premium of fifty *per cent.* or a little more ; by which charitable methods , together with lending money to other people , and even to his own master and mistress , the honest man had , from nothing , in a few years amassed a small sum of twenty thousand pounds , or thereabouts.

Joseph having received his little remainder of wages , and having stripped off his livery , was forced to borrow a frock and breeches of one of the servants , ( for he was so beloved in the family , that they would all have lend him any thing ) and being told by

by Peter, that he must not stay a moment longer in the house than was necessary to pack up his linen; which he easily did in a very narrow compass; he took a melancholy leave of his fellow-servants, and set out at seven in the evening.

He had proceeded the length of two or three streets, before he absolutely determined with himself, whether he should leave the town that night, or, procuring a lodging, wait till the morning. At last, the moon shining very bright, helped him to come to a resolution of beginning his journey immediately, to which, likewise, he had some other inducements; which the reader, without being a conjurer, cannot possibly guess, till we have given him those hints, which it may be now proper to open.

## CHAP. XI.

*Of several new matters not expected.*

IT is an observation sometimes made, that to indicate our idea of a simple fellow, we say, *he is easily to be seen through*: nor do I believe it a more improper denotation of a simple book. Instead of applying this to any particular performance, we chuse rather to remark the contrary in this history, where the scene opens itself by small degrees;

and he is a sagacious reader who can see two chapters before him,

For this reason we have not hitherto hinted a matter which now seems necessary to be explained; since it may be wondered at first, that Joseph made such extraordinary haste out of town, which hath been already shewn, and secondly, which will be now shewn, that instead of proceeding to the habitation of his father and mother, or to his beloved sister Pamela, he chose rather to set out full speed to the lady Booby's country-seat, which he had left on his journey to London.

Be it known then, that in the same parish where this seat stood, there lived a young girl whom Joseph (though the best of sons and brothers) longed more impatiently to see than his parents or his sister. She was a poor girl, who had formerly been bred up in Sir John's family; whence, a little before the journey to London, she had been discarded by Mrs. Slipslop on account of her extraordinary beauty, for I never could find any other reason.

This young creature (who now lived with a farmer in the parish) had been always beloved by Joseph, and returned his affection. She was two years only younger than our hero. They had been acquainted from their infancy, and had conceived a very early liking for each other, which had grown to

such a degree of affection, that Mr. Adams had with much ado prevented them from marrying, and persuaded them to wait, till a few years service and thrift had a little improved their experience, and enabled them to live comfortably together.

They followed this good man's advice; as indeed his word was little less than a law in his parish; for as he had shewn his parishioners, by an uniform behaviour of thirty-five years duration, that he had their good entirely at heart; so they consulted him on every occasion, and very seldom acted contrary to his opinion.

Nothing can be imagined more tender than was the parting between these two lovers. A thousand sighs heaved the bosom of Joseph: A thousand tears distilled from the lovely eyes of Fanny, (for that was her name). Though her modesty would only suffer to admit his eager kisses, her violent love made her more than passive in his embraces; and she often pulled him to her breast, with a soft pressure, which, though perhaps it would not have squeezed an insect to death, caused more emotion in the heart of Joseph, than the closest Cornish hug could have done.

The reader may perhaps wonder, that so fond a pair should, during a twelvemonth's absence, never converse with one another; indeed, there was but one reason which did,

32      The ADVENTURES of

or could have prevented them ; and this was ; that poor Fanny could neither write nor read, nor could she be prevailed upon to transmit the delicacies of her tender and chaste passion by the hands of an amanuensis.

They contented themselves therefore with frequent inquiries after each other's health , with a mutual confidence in each other's fidelity , and the prospect of their future happiness.

Having explained these matters to our reader , and , as far as possible , satisfied all his doubts , we return to honest Joseph , whom we left just set out on his travels by the light of the moon.

Those who have read any romance or poetry , ancient or modern , must have been informed that love hath wings , by which they are not to understand , as some young ladies by mistake have done , that a lover can fly : the writers , by this ingenious allegory , intended to insinuate no more , than that lovers do not march like horse guards ; in short , that they put the best leg foremost ; which our lusty youth , who could walk with any man , did so heartily on this occasion , that within four hours he reached a famous house of hospitality well known to the western traveller. It presents you a lion on a sign-post : and the master , who was christened Timotheus , is commonly called plain Tim. Some have conceived that he

hath particularly chosen the lion for his sign, as he doth in countenance greatly resemble that magnanimous beast, though his disposition favours more of the sweetness of the lamb. He is a person well received among all sorts of men, being qualified to render himself agreeable to any; as he is well versed in history and politics, hath a smattering in law and divinity, cracks a good jest, and plays wonderfully well on the French horn.

A violent storm of hail forced Joseph to take shelter in this inn, where he remembered Sir Thomas had dined in his way to town. Joseph had no sooner seated himself by the kitchen fire, than Timotheus, observing his livery, began to condole the loss of his late master; who was, he said, his very particular and intimate acquaintance, with whom he had cracked many a merry bottle, aye many a dozen in his time. He then remarked, that all those things were over now, all past, and just as if they had never been; and concluded with an excellent observation on the certainty of death, which his wife said was indeed very true. A fellow now arrived at the same inn with two horses, one of which he was leading farther down into the country to meet his master; these he put into the stable, and came and took his place by Joseph's side, who immediately knew him to be the servant of a



54      **THE ADVENTURES OF**  
neighbouring gentleman, who used to visit  
at their house.

This fellow was likewise forced in by the storm; for he had orders to go twenty miles farther that evening, and luckily on the same road which Joseph himself intended to take. He therefore embraced this opportunity of complimenting his friend with his master's horses, (notwithstanding he had received express commands to the contrary) which was readily accepted: and so after they had drank a loving pot, and the storm was over, they set out together.

## C H A P.   X I I.

*Containing many surprising adventures, which Joseph Andrews met with on the road, scarce credible to those who have never travelled in a stage-coach.*

**N**OTHING remarkable happened on the road, till their arrival at the inn to which the horses were ordered; whither they came about two in the morning. The moon then shone very bright; and Joseph making his friend a present of a pint of wine, and thanking him for the favour of his horse, notwithstanding all intreaties to the contrary, proceeded on his journey on foot.

He had not gone above two miles, charm-

med with the hopes of shortly seeing his beloved Fanny, when he was met by two fellows in a narrow lane, and ordered to stand and deliver. He readily gave them all the money he had, which was somewhat less than two pounds; and told them he hoped they would be so generous as to return him a few shillings, to defray his charges on his way home.

One of the ruffians answered with an oath, *Yes, we'll give you something presently; but first strip and be d — n'd to you. — Strip*, cry'd the other; *or I'll blow your brains to the devil*. Joseph remembering that he had borrowed his coat and breeches of a friend; and that he should be ashamed of making any excuse for not returning them, replied, he hoped they would not insist on his clothes, which were not worth much; but consider the coldness of the night. *You are cold, are you, you rascal!* says one of the robbers, *I'll warm you with a vengeance*; and, damning his eyes, snapt a pistol at his head; which he had no sooner done, than the other levelled a blow at him with his stick, which Joseph, who was expert at cudgel-playing, caught with his, and returned the favour so successfully on his adversary, that he laid him sprawling at his feet, and at the same instant received a blow from behind, with the butt-end of a pistol, from the other villain, which felled him to

the ground, and totally deprived him of his senses.

The thief, who had been knocked down, had now recovered himself; and both together fell to belabouring poor Joseph with their sticks, till they were convinced they had put an end to his miserable being: they then stripped him entirely naked, threw him into a ditch, and departed with their booty.

The poor wretch, who lay motionless a long time, just began to recover his senses as a stage-coach came by. The postilion, hearing a man's groans, stopped his horses, and told the coachman, « He was certain that « there was a *dead* man lying in the ditch, « for he heard him groan. » « Go on, Sir- « rah, » says the coachman, « we are con- « founded late, and have no time to look « after dead men. » A lady, who heard what the postilion said, and likewise heard the groan, called eagerly to the coachman, « To « stop, and see what was the matter. » Upon which he bid the postillion « alight, and « look into the ditch. » He did so, and returned, « That there was a man sitting « upright as naked as ever he was born. » — « O Jesus, » cried the lady, « a naked man! « dear coachman, drive on and leave him, » Upon this the gentlemen got out of the coach; and Joseph begged them, « to have « mercy upon him: For that he had been rob- « bed, and almost beaten to death. » « Rob-

« bed, » cries an old gentleman ; « let us  
 « make all the haste imaginable, or we shall  
 « be robbed too. » A young man, who be-  
 longed to the law, answered. « He wished  
 « they had passed by without taking any no-  
 « tice : but that now they might be proved to  
 « have been *last in his company*, if he should  
 « die, they might be called to some account  
 « for his murder. He therefore thought it ad-  
 « visable to save the poor creature's life, for  
 « their own sakes, if possible ; at least, if he  
 « died, to prevent the jury's finding *that they*  
 « *fled for it*. He was therefore of opinion,  
 « to take the man into the coach, and carry  
 « him to the next inn. » The lady insisted, «  
 « that he should not come into the coach :  
 « that if they lifted him in, she would her-  
 « self alight ; for she had rather stay in that  
 « place to all eternity than ride with a naked  
 « man. » The coachman objected, « that he  
 « could not suffer him to be taken in, unless  
 « some body would pay a shilling for his  
 « carriage the four miles. » Which the two  
 gentlemen refused to do ; but the lawyer,  
 who was afraid of some mischief happening  
 to himself, if the wretch was left behind in  
 that condition, saying, « No man could be  
 « too cautious in these matters, and that he  
 « remembered very extraordinary cases in the  
 « books, threatned the coachman, and bid  
 « him deny taking him up at his peril ; for  
 « that if he died, he should be indicted for

« his murder, and if he lived, and brought  
« an action against him, he would willingly  
« take a brief in it. » These words had a sensible effect on the coachman, who was well acquainted with the person who spoke them; and the old gentleman above-mentioned, thinking the naked man would afford him frequent opportunities of shewing his wit to the lady, offered to join with the company in giving a mug of beer for his fare; till partly alarmed by the threats of the one, and partly by the promises of the other, and being perhaps a little moved with compassion at the poor creature's condition, who stood bleeding and shivering with the cold, he at length agreed; and Joseph was now advancing to the coach, where seeing the lady, who held the sticks of her fan before her eyes, he absolutely refused, miserable as he was, to enter, unless he was furnished with sufficient covering to prevent giving the least offence to decency. So perfectly modest was this young man; such mighty effects had the spotless example of the amiable Pamela, and the excellent sermons of Mr. Adams wrought upon him.

Though there were several great coats about the coach, it was not easy to get over this difficulty which Joseph had started. The two gentlemen complained they were cold, and could not spare a rag; the man of wit saying, with a laugh, that charity began at

home; and the coachman, who had two greatcoats spread under him, refused to lend either, lest they should be made bloody; the lady's footman desired to be excused for the same reason, which the lady herself, notwithstanding her abhorrence of a naked man, approved: and it is more than probable poor Joseph, who obstinately adhered to his modest resolution, must have perished, unless the postilion (a lad who hath been since transported for robbing a hen-roost), had voluntarily stript off a great coat, his only garment, at the same time swearing a great oath, (for which he was rebuked by the passengers), « That he would rather ride in « his shirt all his life, than suffer a fellow- « creature to lie in so miserable a condition.»

Joseph, having put on the great coat, was lifted into the coach, which now proceeded on its journey. He declared himself almost dead with the cold, which gave the man of wit an occasion to ask the lady, if she could not accommodate him with a dram. She answered, with some resentment, « she wondered « at his asking her such a question; but assured « him she never tasted any such thing.»

The lawyer was inquiring into the circumstances of the robbery, when the coach stopt, and one of the russians putting a pistol in, demanded their money of the passengers, who readily gave it them; and the lady, in her fright, delivered up a little silver bot-

tle, of about a half pint size, which the rogue, clapping it to his mouth, and drinking her health, declared held some of the best Nantes he had ever tasted: this the lady afterwards assured the company was the mistake of her maid; for that she had ordered her to fill the bottle with Hungary water.

As soon as the fellows were departed, the lawyer, who had, it seems, a case of pistols in the seat of the coach, informed the company, that if it had been day-light, and he could have come at his pistols, he would not have submitted to the robbery; he likewise set forth, that he had often met highwaymen when he travelled on horseback, but none ever durst attack him; concluding, that if he had not been more afraid for the lady than for himself, he should not have now parted with his money so easily.

As wit is generally observed to love to reside in empty pockets, so the gentleman, whose ingenuity we have above remarked, as soon as he had parted with his money, began to grow wonderfully facetious. He made frequent allusions to Adam and Eve, and said many excellent things on figs and figleaves, which, perhaps, gave more offence to Joseph than to any other in the company.

The lawyer likewise made several very pretty jests, without departing from his profession. He said, «If Joseph and the lady



« were alone , he would be more capable of  
 « making a conveyance to her, as his affairs  
 « were not fettered with any incumbrance ;  
 « he'd warrant , he soon suffered a recovery  
 « by a writ of entry, which was the proper  
 « way to create heirs in tail ; that for his  
 « own part, he would engage to make so  
 « firm a settlement in a coach , that there  
 « should be no danger of an ejectionment ; »  
 with an inundation of the like gibberish,  
 which he continued to vent till the coach ar-  
 rived at an inn , were one servant-maid only  
 was up in readiness to attend the coachman ,  
 and furnish him with cold meat and a dram.  
 Joseph desired to alight, and that he might  
 have a bed prepared for him, which the  
 maid readily promised to perform ; and  
 being a good-natured wench , and not so  
 squeamish as the lady had been, she clapt a  
 large faggot on the fire, and furnishing Jo-  
 seph with a great coat belonging to one of  
 the hostlers , desired him to sit down and  
 warm himself, whilst she made his bed. The  
 coachman , in the mean time, took an op-  
 portunity to call up a surgeon, who lived  
 within a few doors : after which he remind-  
 ed his passengers how late they were , and  
 after they had taken leave of Joseph, hurried  
 them off as fast as he could.

The wench soon got Joseph to bed , and  
 promised to use her interest to borrow him a  
 shirt ; but imagined , as she afterwards said,

by his being so bloody, that he must be a dead man: she ran with all speed to hasten the surgeon, who was more than half dressed, apprehending that the coach had been overturned, and some gentleman or lady hurt. As soon as the wench had informed him at his window, that it was a poor foot-passenger who had been stript of all he had, and almost murdered; he chid her for disturbing him so early, slipped off his clothes again, and very quietly returned to bed and to sleep.

Aurora now began to shew her blooming cheeks over the hills, whilst ten millions of feathered songsters, in jocund chorus, repeated odes a thousand times sweeter than those of our laureat, and sung both the day and the song; when the master of the inn, Mr. Tow-wouse, arose; and learning from his maid an account of the robbery, and the situation of his poor naked guest, he shook his head, and cried, Good lack-a-day! and then ordered the girl to carry him one of his shirts.

Mrs. Tow-wouse was just awake, and had stretched out her arms in vain to fold her departed husband, when the maid entered the room. « Who's there? Betty? » « Yes, « Madam » « Where's your master? » « He's « without, Madam; he hath sent me for a « shirt to lend a poor naked man, who hath « been robbed and murdered. » « Touch one

« if you dare, you slut, » said Mrs. Tow-  
 wouse; « your master is a pretty sort of a  
 « mad, to take in naked vagabonds, and clo-  
 « the them with his own clothes. I shall have  
 « no such doings. — If you offer to touch  
 « any thing, I'll throw the chamberpot at  
 « your head. Go, send your master to me. »  
 « Yes, Madam, » answered Betty. As soon  
 as he came in, she thus began: « What the  
 « devil do you mean by this, Mr. Tow-  
 « wouse? Am I to buy shirts to lend to a  
 « set of scabby rascals? » « My dear, » said  
 Mr. Tow-wouse, « this is a poor wretch. »  
 « Yes, » says she, « I know it is a poor  
 « wretch; but what the devil have we to do  
 « with poor wretches? the law makes us  
 « provide for too many already: we shall  
 « have thirty or forty poor wretches in red  
 « coats shortly. » « My dear, » cries Tow-  
 wouse, « this man hath been robbed of all  
 « he hath. » « Well then, » says she, « whe-  
 « re's his money to pay his reckoning? Why  
 « doth not such a fellow go to an alehouse?  
 « I shall send him packing as soon as I am up,  
 « I assure you. » « My dear, » said he, « com-  
 « mon charity won't suffer you to do that. »  
 « Common charity, a f — t! » says she, «  
 « common charity teaches us to provide for  
 « ourselves and our families; and I and mine  
 « won't be ruined by your charity, I assure  
 « you. » « Well, » says he, « my dear, do as  
 « you will when you are up; you know I

« never contradict you. » « No, » says she, « if the devil was to contradict me, I would make the house too hot to hold him. »

With such like discourses they consumed near half an hour, whilst Betty provided a shirt from the hostler, who was one of her sweethearts, and put it on poor Joseph. The surgeon had likewise at last visited him, and washed and dressed his wounds, and was now come to acquaint Mr. Tow-wouse that his guest was in such extreme danger of his life, that he scarce saw any hopes of his recovery. — « Here's a pretty kettle of fish, » cries Mrs. Tow-wouse, « you have brought upon us! we are like to have a funeral at our own expence. » Tow-wouse, ( who, notwithstanding his charity, would have given his vote as freely as ever he did at an election, that any other house in the kingdom should have quiet possession of his guest ) answered, « My dear, I am not to blame : he was brought hither by the stage-coach ; and Betty had put him to bed before I was stirring. » « I'll Betty her, » says she — At which, with half her garments on, the other half under her arm, she sallied out in quest of the unfortunate Betty, whilst Tow-wouse and the surgeon went to pay a visit to poor Joseph, and inquire into the circumstances of this melancholy affair.

## CHAP. XIII.

*What happened to Joseph during his sickness at the inn, with the curious discourse between him and M. Barnabas, the parson of the parish.*

AS soon as Joseph had communicated a particular history of the robbery, together with a short account of himself and his intended journey, he asked the surgeon, if he apprehended him to be in any danger: to which the surgeon very honestly answered, « He feared he was; for that his pulse was « very exalted and feverish, and if his fever « should prove more than symptomatic, it « would be impossible to save him.» Joseph, fetching a deep sigh, cried, « Poor Fanny, « I would I could have lived to see thee! but « God's will be done.»

The surgeon then advised him, if he had any wordly affairs to settle, that he would do it as soon as possible; for though he hoped he might recover, yet he thought himself obliged to acquaint him he was in great danger; and if the malign concoction of his humours should cause a fuscitation of his fever, he might soon grow delirious, and incapable to make his will. Joseph answered, « That it was impossible for any creature in

« the universe to be in a poorer condition  
« than himself : for since the robbery, he had  
« not one thing of any kind whatever,  
« which he could call his own. « I had , »  
said he , « a poor little piece of gold, which  
« they took away, that would have been a  
« comfort to me in all my afflictions ; but su-  
« rely, Fanny, I want nothing to remind me  
« of thee. I have thy dear image in my heart,  
« and no villain can ever tear it thence. »

Joseph desired paper and pens to write a letter, but they were refused him; and he was advised to use all his endeavours to compose himself. They then left him ; and Mr. Tow-wouse sent to a clergyman to come and administer his good offices to the soul of poor Joseph, since the surgeon despaired of making any successful applications to his body.

Mr. Barnabas ( for that was the clergyman's name ) came as soon as sent for ; and having first drank a dish of tea with the landlady, and afterwards a bowl of punch with the landlord, he walked up to the room where Joseph lay : but finding him asleep, returned to take the other sneaker ; which, when he had finished, he again crept softly up to the chamber-door, and, having opened it, heard the sick man talking to himself in the following manner.

« O most adorable Pamela ! most virtuous  
« sister ; whose example alone could enable

me to withstand all the temptations of  
 riches and beauty, and to preserve my  
 virtue pure and chaste for the arms of my  
 dear Fanny, if it had pleased heaven that  
 I should ever have come unto them. What  
 riches or honours, or pleasures can make  
 us amends for the loss of innocence? Doth  
 not that alone afford us more consolation  
 than all worldly acquisitions? What but  
 innocence and virtue could give any com-  
 fort to such a miserable wretch as I am? Yet  
 these can make me prefer this sick and pain-  
 ful bed to all the pleasures I should have  
 found in my lady's. These can make me  
 face death without fear; and though I love  
 my Fanny more than ever man loved a  
 woman, these can teach me to resign myself  
 to the divine will without repining. O thou  
 delightful charming creature! if heaven had  
 indulged thee to my arms, the poorest,  
 humblest state, would have been a paradise;  
 I could have lived with thee in the lowest  
 cottage, without envying the palaces, the  
 dainties, or the riches of any man breathing.  
 But I must leave thee, leave thee for ever,  
 my dearest angel! I must think of another  
 world; and I heartily pray thou may'st meet  
 comfort in this. — Barnabas thought  
 he had heard enough; so down stairs he  
 went, and told Tow-wouse he could do  
 his guest no service; for that he was very  
 light-headed, and had uttered nothing but a



rhapsody of nonsense all the time he stayed in the room.

The surgeon returned in the afternoon, and found his patient in a higher fever, as he said, than when he left him, though not delirious: for notwithstanding Mr. Barnaba's opinion, he had not been once out of his senses since his arrival at the inn.

Mr. Barnabas was again sent for, and with much difficulty prevailed upon to make another visit. As soon as he entered the room, he told Joseph. « He was come to pray by « him, and to prepare him for another world: « in the first place, therefore, he hoped he « had repented of his sins. » Joseph answered, « He hoped he had; but there was one « thing which he knew not whether he should « call a sin; if it was, he feared he should die « in the commission of it; and that was the regret of parting with a young woman, whom « he loved as tenderly as he did his heart- « strings. » Barnabas bade him be assured, « that any repining at the divine will was one « of the greatest sins he could commit; that « he ought to forget all carnal affections, and « think of better things. » Joseph said, « That « neither in this world nor the next he could « forget his Fanny; and that the thought, « however grievous, of parting from her for « ever, was not half so tormenting as the « fear of what she would suffer when she knew « his misfortune. » Barnabas said, « That such

« fears argued a diffidence and despondence  
 « very criminal ; that he must divest himself  
 « of all human passions, and fix his heart a-  
 « bove. » Joseph answered, « That was what  
 « he desired to do, and should be obliged to  
 « him, if he would enable him to accomplish  
 « it. » Barnabas replied, « That must be done  
 « by grace. » Joseph besought him to discover  
 how he might attain it. Barnabas answered,  
 « By prayer and faith. » He then questioned  
 him concerning his forgiveness of the thieves.  
 Joseph answered, « He feared that was more  
 « than he could do ; for nothing would give  
 « him more pleasure than to hear they were  
 « taken. » « That, » cries Barnabas, « is for  
 « the sake of justice. » « Yes, » says Joseph,  
 « but if I was to meet them again, I am afraid  
 « I should attack them, and kill them too, if  
 « I could. » « Doubtless, » answered Barna-  
 bas, « it is lawful to kill a thief ; but can you  
 « say you forgive them as a Christian ought ? »  
 Joseph desired to know what that forgiveness  
 was. « That is, » answered Barnabas, « to  
 « forgive them as—as—it is to forgive them  
 « as—in short, it is to forgive them as a Chris-  
 « tian. » Joseph replied, « He forgave them as  
 « much as he could. » « Well, well, » said  
 Barnabas, « that will do. » He then demand-  
 ed of him, « if he remembered any more sins  
 « unrepented of ; and if he did, he desired  
 « him to make haste and repent of them as  
 « fast as he could ; that they might repeat over a

70      The ADVENTURES of

« few prayers together. » Joseph answered ;  
 « He could not recollect any great crimes he  
 « had been guilty of , and that those he had  
 « committed he was sincerely sorry for. » Bar-  
 nabas said that was enough , and then pro-  
 ceeded to prayer with all the expedition he was  
 master of ; some company then waiting for  
 him below in the parlour , where the ingre-  
 dients for punch were all in readiness ; but  
 no one would squeeze the oranges till he  
 came.

Joseph complained he was dry , and desired  
 a little tea ; which Barnabas reported to Mrs.  
 Tow-wouse , who answered , « She had just  
 « done drinking it , and could not be stop-  
 « ping all day ; » but ordered Betty to carry  
 him up some small beer.

Betty obeyed her mistress's commands ;  
 but Joseph , as soon as he had tasted it , said ,  
 « He feared it would increase his fever , and that  
 « he longed very much for tea ; » to which  
 the good-natured Betty answered , « He should  
 « have tea , if there was any in the land. » She  
 accordingly went and bought him some her-  
 self , and attended him with it ; where we  
 will leave her and Joseph together for some  
 time , to entertain the reader with other  
 matters.

## C H A P. X I V.

*Being very full of adventures, which succeeded each other at the inn.*

**I**T was now the dusk of the evening, when a grave person rode into the inn, and committing his horse to the hostler, went directly into the kitchen, and having called for a pipe of tobacco, took his place by the fire-side, where several persons were likewise assembled.

The discourse ran altogether on the robbery which was committed the night before, and on the poor wretch who lay above in the dreadful condition in which we have already seen him. Mrs Tow-wouse said, « She « wondered what the devil Tom Whipwell « meant by bringing such guests to her house, when there were so many ale-houses on « the road proper for their reception. But she « assured him, if he died, the parish should « be at the expence of the funeral. » She added, « Nothing would serve the fellow's turn « but tea, she would assure him. » Betty, who was just returned from her charitable office, answered, « she believed he was a gentleman, for she never saw a finerskin in her « life : » « Pox on his skin ! » replied Mrs. Tow-wouse, « I suppose that is all we are like

«to have for the reckoning. I desire no such gentlemen should ever call at the Dragon,» (which, it seems, was the sign of the inn.)

The gentleman lately arrived discovered a great deal of emotion at the distress of this poor creature, whom he observed to be fallen not into the most compassionate hands. And indeed, if Mrs. Tow-wouse had given no utterance to the sweetness of her temper, Nature had taken such pains in her countenance, that Hogarth himself never gave more expression to a picture.

Her person was short, thin, and crooked. Her forehead projected in the middle, and thence descended in a declivity to the top of her nose, which was sharp and red, and would have hung over her lips, had not Nature turned up the end of it. Her lips were two bits of skin, which, whenever she spoke, she drew together in a purse. Her chin was peaked; and at the upper end of that skin, which composed her cheeks, stood two bones, that almost hid a pair of small red eyes. Add to this a voice most wonderfully adapted to the sentiments it was to convey, being both loud and hoarse.

It is not easy to say whether the gentleman had conceived a greater dislike for his landlady, or compassion for her unhappy guest. He inquired very earnestly of the surgeon, who was now come into the kitchen, whether he had any hopes of his recovery: he begged

begged him to use all possible means towards it, telling him, « it was the duty of men of « all professions to apply their skill gratis for « the relief of the poor and necessitous. » The surgeon answered, « He should take proper « care; but he defied all the surgeons in Lon- « don to do him any good. » « Pray, Sir, » said the gentleman, « what are his wounds? — « Why, do you know any thing of « wounds? » says the surgeon, (winking upon Mrs. Tow-wouse.) « Sir, I have a small « smattering in surgery, » answered the gentleman. « A smattering, — ho, ho, ho! » said the surgeon, « I believe it is a smattering in- « deed. »

The company were all attentive, expecting to hear the doctor, who was what they call a dry fellow, expose the gentleman.

He began therefore with an air of triumph: « I suppose, Sir, you have travelled. » « No « really, Sir, » said the gentleman. « Ho! « then you have practised in the hospitals, « perhaps. » — « No, Sir. » « Hum! not that « neither? Whence, Sir, then, if I may be « so bold to inquire, have you got your know- « ledge in surgery? » « Sir, » answered the gentleman, « I do not pretend to much; « but the little I know, I have from books. » « Books! » cries the doctor, — « What, I sup- « pose you have read Galen and Hippocra- « tes! » « No, Sir, » said the gentleman. « How! you understand surgery, » answers

the doctor, « and not read Galen and Hippocrates! » « Sir, » cries the other, « I believe there are many surgeons who have never read these authors. » « I believe so too, » says the doctor, « more shame for them : but thanks to my education, I have them by heart, and very seldom go without them both in my pocket. » « They are pretty large books, » said the gentleman. « Aye, » said the doctor, « I believe I know how large they are better than you. » ( At which he fell a winking, and the whole company burst into a laugh. )

The doctor pursuing his triumph, asked the gentleman, « if he did not understand physic as well as surgery. » « Rather better, » answered the gentleman. « Aye, like enough, » cries the doctor, with a wink. « Why, I know a little of physic too. » « I wish I knew half so much, » said Tow-woose, « I'd never wear an apron again. » « Why, I believe, landlord, » cries the doctor, « there are few men, though I say it, within twelve miles of the place, that handle a fever better. — *Veniente occurrere morbo* : that is my method. — I suppose, brother, « you understand Latin? » « A little, » says the gentleman. « Aye, and Greek now, « I'll warrant you : *Ton dapomibominos po-iastlosboio Thalasses*. But I have almost forgot these things ; I could have repeated « Homer by heart once. » — « Ifsags! the gen-



« gentleman has caught a traytor, » says Mrs. Tow-wouse; at which they all fell a laughing.

The gentleman, who had not the least affection for joking, very contentedly suffered the doctor to enjoy his victory; which he did with no small satisfaction: and having sufficiently sounded his depth, told him, « He was thoroughly convinced of his « great learning and abilities, and that he « would be obliged to him, if he would let « him know his opinion of his patient's « case above stairs. » « Sir, » says the doctor, « his case is that of a dead man.— The « contusion on his head has perforated the « internal membrane of the occiput, and « divellicated that radical small minute invi- « sible nerve, which coheres to the pericra- « nium; and this was attended with a fever, « at first symptomatic, then pneumatic; and « he is at length grown delirious, or deli- « rious, as the vulgar express it. »

He was proceeding in this learned manner, when a mighty noise interrupted him. Some young fellows in the neighbourhood had taken one of the thieves, and were bringing him into the inn. Betty ran up stairs with this news to Joseph; who begged they might search for a little piece of broken gold, which had a ribband tied to it, and which he could swear to amongst all the hoards of the richest men in the universe.

Notwithstanding the fellow's persisting in

his innocence, the mob were very busy in searching him, and presently, among other things, pulled out the piece of gold just mentioned; which Betty no sooner saw than she laid violent hands on it, and conveyed it up to Joseph, who received it with raptures of joy, and hugging it in his bosom, declared, he could now die contented.

Within a few minutes afterwards, came in some other fellows, with a bundle which they had found in a ditch, and which was indeed the cloaths which had been stripped off from Joseph, and the other things they had taken from him.

The gentleman no sooner saw the coat, than he declared he knew the livery; and, if it had been taken from the poor creature above stairs, desired he might see him: for that he was very well acquainted with the family to whom that livery belonged.

He was accordingly conducted up by Betty: but what, reader, was the surprise on both sides, when he saw Joseph was the person in bed; and when Joseph discovered the face of his good friend Mr. Abraham Adams!

It would be impertinent to insert a discourse which chiefly turned on the relation of matters already well known to the reader: for as soon as the curate had satisfied Joseph concerning the perfect health of his Fanny, he was on his side very inquisitive into all

the particulars which had produced this unfortunate accident.

To return therefore to the kitchen, where a great variety of company were now assembled from all the rooms of the house, as well as the neighbourhood; so much delight do men take in contemplating the countenance of a thief.

Mr. Tow-wouse began to rub his hands with pleasure at seeing so large an assembly; who would, he hoped, shortly adjourn into several apartments, in order to discourse over the robbery, and drink a health to all honest men. But Mrs. Tow-wouse, whose misfortune it was commonly to see things a little perversely, began to rail at those who brought the fellow into her house, telling her husband, « they were very likely to thrive, who kept a house of entertainment for beggars and thieves. »

The mob had now finished their search, and could find nothing about the captive likely to prove any evidence: for as to the cloaths, though the mob were very well satisfied with that proof, yet, as the surgeon observed, they could not convict him, because they were not found in his custody; to which Barnabas agreed, and added, that these were *bona waviata*, and belonged to the lord of the manor.

« How, » says the surgeon, « do you say these goods belong to the lord of the ma-

« nor? » « I do , » cried Barnabas. « Then  
« I deny it , » says the surgeon. « What can  
« the lord of the manor have to do in the  
« case? Will any one attempt to persuade  
« me that what a man finds is not his  
« own! » « I have heard (says an old fellow  
in the corner ) Justice Wiseone say , that  
« if every man had his right , whatever is  
« found belongs to the king of London. »  
« That may be true , » says Barnabas , « in  
« some sense ; for the law makes a difference  
« between things stolen and things found :  
« for a thing may be stolen that is never  
« found , and a thing may be found that never  
« was stolen. Now goods that are both sto-  
« len and found , are *waviata* , and they be-  
« long to the lord of the manor. » « So the  
« lord of the manor is the receiver of stolen  
« goods , » says the doctor ; at which there  
was a universal laugh , being first begun  
by himself.

While the prisoner , by persisting in his  
innocence , had almost ( as there was no evi-  
dence against him ) brought over Barnabas ,  
the surgeon , Tow-wouse , and several others  
to his side , Betty informed them , that they  
had overlooked a little piece of gold , which  
she had carried up to the man in bed ; and  
which he offered to swear to amongst a  
million , aye , amongst ten thousand. This  
immediately turned the scale against the pri-  
soner ; and every one now concluded him

guilty. It was resolved therefore to keep him secured that night, and early in the morning to carry him before a justice.

## C H A P. X V.

*Shewing how Mrs Tow-wouse was a little mollified; and how officious Mr Barnabas and the surgeon were to prosecute the thief: with a dissertation accounting for their zeal, and that of many other persons not mentioned in this history.*

BETTY told her mistress, she believed the man in bed was a greater man than they took him for; for, besides the extreme whiteness of his skin, and the softness of his hands, she observed a very great familiarity between the gentleman and him; and added, she was certain they were intimate acquaintance, if not relations.

This somewhat abated the severity of Mrs Tow-wouse's countenance. She said, « God forbid she should not discharge the duty of a Christian, since the poor gentleman was brought to her house. She had a natural antipathy to vagabonds; but could pity the misfortunes of a Christian, as soon as another. » Tow-wouse said, « If the traveller be a gentleman, though he hath no money about him now, we shall most likely

« be paid hereafter ; so you may begin to  
 « score whenever you will. » Mrs Tow-wouse  
 answered, « Hold your simple tongue, and  
 « don't instruct me in my business. I am sure  
 « I am sorry for the gentleman's misfortune  
 « with all my heart, and I hope the villain  
 « who hath used him so barbarously will be  
 « hanged. Betty, go see what he wants. God  
 « forbid he should want any thing in my  
 « house. »

Barnabas and the surgeon went up to Joseph, to satisfy themselves concerning the piece of gold. Joseph was with difficulty prevailed upon to shew it them ; but would by no entreaties be brought to deliver it out of his own possession. He however attested this to be the same which had been taken from him ; and Betty was ready to swear to the finding it on the thief.

The only difficulty that remained, was how to produce this gold before the justice : for as to carrying Joseph himself, it seemed impossible ; nor was there any great likelihood of obtaining it from him : for he had fastened it with a ribbon to his arm, and solemnly vowed, that nothing but irresistible force should ever separate them ; in which resolution Mr Adams, clenching a fist rather less than the knuckle of an ox, declared he would support him.

A dispute arose on this occasion concerning evidence, not very necessary to be rela-

ted here; after which the surgeon drest Mr Joseph's head; still persisting in the imminent danger in which his patient lay; but concluding with a very important look, « that he began to have some hopes; that he « should send him a sanative soporiferous « draught, and would see him in the mor- « ning. » After which Barnabas and he departed, and left Mr Joseph and Mr Adams together.

Adams informed Joseph of the occasion of this journey which he was making to London, namely, to publish three volumes of sermons; being encouraged, as he said, by an advertisement lately set forth by a society of booksellers, who proposed to purchase any copies offered to them, at a price to be settled by two persons: but though he imagined he should get a considerable sum of money on this occasion, which his family were in urgent need of, he protested he would not leave Joseph in his present condition: finally, he told him, « he had nine shil- « lings and threepence halfpenny in his poc- « ket, which he was welcome to use as he « pleased. »

This goodness of Parson Adams brought tears into Joseph's eyes; he declared he had now a « second reason to desire life, that he « might shew his gratitude to such a friend. » Adams bade him « be chearful; for that he « plainly saw the surgeon, besides his igno-



« rance, desired to make a merit of curing  
 « him, though the wounds in his head, he  
 « perceived, were by no means dangerous;  
 « that he was convinced he had no fever, and  
 « doubted not but he would be able to travel  
 « in a day or two. »

These words infused a spirit into Joseph;  
 he said, « he found himself very sore from  
 « the bruises, but had no reason to think any  
 « of his bones injured, or that he had recei-  
 « ved any harm in his inside; unless that he  
 « felt something very odd in his stomach :  
 « but he knew not whether that might not  
 « arise from his not having eaten one morsel  
 « for above twenty-four hours. » Being then  
 asked if he had any inclination to eat, he  
 answered in the affirmative. Then parson  
 Adams desired him to name what he had the  
 greatest fancy for; whether a poached egg,  
 or chicken broth: he answered, « he could  
 « eat both very well, but that he seemed to  
 « have the greatest appetite for a piece of  
 « boiled beef and cabbage. »

Adams was pleased with so perfect a con-  
 firmation that he had not the least fever; but  
 advised him to a lighter diet for that evening.  
 He accordingly eat either a rabbit or a fowl,  
 I never could with any tolerable certainty  
 discover which; after this, he was, by Mrs  
 Tow-wouse's order, conveyed into a better  
 bed, and equipped with one of her husband's  
 shirts.

In the morning early, Barnabas and the surgeon came to the inn, in order to see the thief conveyed before the justice. They had consumed the whole night in debating what measures they should take to produce the piece of gold in evidence against him: for they were both extremely zealous in the business, though neither of them were in the least interested in the prosecution; neither of them had ever received any private injury from the fellow, nor had either of them ever been suspected of loving the public well enough, to give them a sermon or a dose of physic for nothing.

To help our reader therefore, as much as possible, to account for this zeal, we must inform him, that, as this parish was so unfortunate as to have no lawyer in it; there had been a constant contention between the two doctors, spiritual and physical, concerning their abilities in a science, in which, as neither of them professed it, they had equal pretensions to dispute each other's opinions. These disputes were carried on with great contempt on both sides, and had almost divided the parish; Mr Tow-wouse and one half of the neighbours inclining to the surgeon, and Mrs Tow-wouse, with the other half, to the parson. The surgeon drew his knowledge from those inestimable fountains, called the Attorney's Pocket Companion, and Mr Jacob's Law-tables; Barnabas trusted entirely

to Wood's Institutes. It happened on this occasion, as was pretty frequently the case, that these two learned men differed about the sufficiency of evidence; the doctor being of opinion, that the maid's oath would convict the prisoner without producing the gold; the parson *e contra*, *totis viribus*. To display their parts therefore before the justice and the parish, was the sole motive, which we can discover, to this zeal, which both of them pretended to have for public justice.

O Vanity! how little is thy force acknowledged, or thy operations discerned! How wantonly dost thou deceive mankind under different disguises! Sometimes thou dost wear the face of pity, sometimes of generosity; nay, thou hast the assurance even to put on those glorious ornaments which belong only to heroic virtue. Thou odious, deformed monster! whom priests have railed at, philosophers despised, and poets ridiculed; is there a wretch so abandoned as to own thee for an acquaintance in public? yet how few will refuse to enjoy thee in private! nay, thou art the pursuit of most men through their lives. The greatest villainies are daily practised to please thee; nor is the meanest thief below, or the greatest hero above thy notice. Thy embraces are often the sole aim and sole reward of the private robbery and the plundered province. It is to pamper up thee, thou harlot, that we attempt to with-

draw from others what we do not want, or to withhold from them what they do. All our passions are thy slaves. Avarice itself is often no more than thy handmaid, and even lust thy pimp. The bully Fear, like a coward, flies before thee, and Joy and Grief hide their heads in thy presence.

I know thou wilt think, that whilst I abuse thee, I court thee; and that thy love hath inspired me to write this sarcastical panegyric on thee: but thou art deceived, I value thee not of a farthing; nor will it give me any pain, if thou shouldst prevail on the reader to censure this digression as arrant nonsense: for know, to thy confusion, that I have introduced thee for no other purpose than to lengthen out a short chapter; and so I return to my history.

## CHAP. XVI.

*The escape of the thief. M. Adams's disappointment. The arrival of two very extraordinary personages, and the introduction of Parson Adams to Parson Barnabas.*

**B**ARNABAS and the surgeon being returned, as we have said, to the inn, in order to convey the thief before the justice, were greatly concerned to find a small accident had happened, which somewhat disconcerted

them; and this was no other than the thief's escape, who had modestly withdrawn himself by night, declining all ostentation, and not chusing, in imitation of some great men, to distinguish himself at the expence of being pointed at.

When the company had retired the evening before, the thief was detained in a room where the constable, and one of the young fellows who took him, were planted as his guard. About the second watch, a general complaint of drowth was made both by the prisoner and his keepers; among whom it was at last agreed, that the constable should remain on duty, and the young fellow call up the rapster; in which disposition, the latter apprehended not the least danger, as the constable was well armed, and could besides easily summon him back to his assistance, if the prisoner made the least attempt to gain his liberty.

The young fellow had not long left the room, before it came into the constable's head, that the prisoner might leap on him by surprise, and thereby preventing him of the use of his weapons, especially the long staff, in which he chiefly confided, might reduce the success of a struggle to an equal chance. He wisely therefore, to prevent this inconvenience, slipped out of the room himself, and locked the door, waiting without, with his staff in his hand, ready lifted to fell

the unhappy prisoner, if by ill fortune he should attempt to break out.

But human life, as hath been discovered by some great man or other, ( for I would by no means be understood to affect the honour of making any such discovery ), very much resembles a game at chess: for as in the latter, while a gamester is too attentive to secure himself very strongly on one side the board, he is apt to leave an unguarded opening on the other; so doth it often happen in life; and so did it happen on this occasion: for whilst the cautious constable with such wonderful sagacity had possessed himself of the door, he most unhappily forgot the window.

The thief, who played on the other side, no sooner perceived this opening, than he began to move that way; and finding the passage easy, he took with him the young fellow's hat; and without any ceremony, stepped into the street, and made the best of his way.

The young fellow returning with a double mug of strong beer, was a little surprised to find the constable at the door; but much more so, when, the door being opened, he perceived the prisoner had made his escape, and which way. He threw down the beer, and, without uttering any thing to the constable, except a hearty curse or two, he nimbly leapt out at the window, and went again in pur-

suit of his prey; being very unwilling to lose the reward which he had assured himself of.

The constable hath not been discharged of suspicion on this account: it hath been said, that not being concerned in the taking the thief, he could not have been intitled to any part of the reward, if he had been convicted; that the thief had several guineas in his pocket; that it was very unlikely he should have been guilty of such an oversight; that his pretence for leaving the room was absurd; that it was his constant maxim, that a wise man never refused money on any conditions; that at every election he always had sold his vote to both parties, &c.

But notwithstanding these and many other allegations, I am sufficiently convinced of his innocence; having been positively assured of it, by those who received their informations from his own mouth; which, in the opinion of some moderns, is the best, and indeed only evidence.

All the family were now up, and, with many others, assembled in the kitchen, where Mr. Tow-wouse was in some tribulation; the surgeon having declared, that, by law, he was liable to be indicted for the thief's escape, as it was out of his house; he was a little comforted however, by Mr. Barnabas's opinion, that, as the escape was by night, the indictment would not lie.

Mrs. Tow-wouse delivered herself in the



following words : « Sure never was such a  
 « fool as my husband : would any other per-  
 « son living have left a man in the custody  
 « of such a drunken drowsy blockhead as Tom  
 « Suckbribe ; » ( which was the constable's  
 name ) ; « and if he could be indicted without  
 « any harm to his wife and children, I should  
 « be glad of it. » ( then the bell rung in Jo-  
 seph's room ) « Why Betty, John, Chamber-  
 « lain, where the devil are you all ? have  
 « you no ears, or no conscience, not to tend  
 « the sick better ? — See what the gentleman  
 « wants ; why don't you go yourself, Mr.  
 « Tow-wouse ? but any one may die for  
 « you ; you have no more feeling than a  
 « deal-board. If a man lived a fortnight in  
 « your house without spending a penny, you  
 « would never put him in mind of it. See  
 « whether he drinks tea or coffee for break-  
 « fast, » « Yes, my dear, » cries Tow-wouse.  
 She then asked the doctor and Mr. Barnabas  
 what morning's draught they chose ? who an-  
 swered, they had a pot of cyder-and at the  
 fire ; which we will leave them merry over,  
 and return to Joseph.

He had rose pretty early this morning ; but  
 tho' his wounds were far from threatening  
 any danger, he was so sore with the bruises,  
 that it was impossible for him to think of un-  
 dertaking a journey yet : Mr. Adams, there-  
 fore, whose stock was visibly decreas'd with  
 the expences of supper and breakfast, and

which could not survive that day's scoring, began to consider how it was possible to recruit it. At last, he cried, « He had luckily  
« hit on a sure method; and though it would  
« oblige him to return himself home together  
« with Joseph, it mattered not much. » He then sent for Tow-wouse, and taking him into another room, told him, « He wanted  
« to borrow three guineas, for which he  
« would put ample security into his hands. » Tow-wouse, who expected a watch, or ring, or something of double the value, answered, « He believed he could furnish him. » Upon which Adams, pointing to his saddle-bag, told him, with a face and voice full of solemnity, « That there were in that bag no  
« less than nine volumes of manuscript sermons, as well worth a hundred pounds, as a  
« shilling was worth twelve pence, and that  
« he would deposite one of the volumes in his  
« hands by way of pledge; not doubting but  
« that he would have the honesty to return  
« it on his repayment of the money: for  
« otherwise he must be a very great loser,  
« seeing that every volume would at least  
« bring him ten pounds, as he had been informed by a neighbouring clergyman in the  
« country; for, » said he, « as to my own  
« part, having never yet dealt in printing, I  
« do not pretend to ascertain the exact value  
« of such things. »

Tow-wouse, who was a little surpris'd at

the pawn, said ( and not without some truth ), « That he was no judge of the price of such kind of goods : and as for money, « he really was very short. » Adams answered, « Certainly he would not scruple to lend him « three guineas on what was undoubtedly worth « at least ten. » The landlord replied, « He did not « believe he had so much money in the house, « and besides he was to make up a sum : he was « very confident the books were of much « higher value, and heartily sorry it did not « suit him. » He then cried out, Coming, Sir! though no body called ; and ran down stairs without any fear of breaking his neck.

Poor Adams was extremely dejected at this disappointment, nor knew he what farther stratagem to try. He immediately applied to his pipe, his constant friend and comfort in his afflictions ; and, leaning over the rails, he devoted himself to meditation, assisted by the inspiring fumes of tobacco.

He had on a night-cap drawn over his wig, and a short great coat, which half covered his cassock ; a dress which, added to something comical enough in his countenance, composed a figure likely to attract the eyes of those who were not overgiven to observation.

Whilst he was smoking his pipe in this posture, a coach and six, with a numerous attendance, drove into the inn. There alighted from the coach a young fellow, and a brace

92      The ADVENTURES of  
of pointers, after which another young fellow leapt from the box, and shook the former by the hand; and both, together with the dogs, were instantly conducted by Mr. Tow-wouse into an apartment; whither as they passed, they entertained themselves with the following short facetious dialogue.

« You are a pretty fellow for a coachman ;  
« Jack ! » says he from the coach , « you had  
« almost overturned us just now. » « Pox take  
« you , » says the coachman , « if I had only  
« broke your neck, it would have been saving  
« somebody else the trouble : but I should  
« have been sorry for the pointers. » « Why,  
« you son of a b — , » answered the other ,  
« if nobody could shoot better than you , the  
« pointers would be of no use. » « D-n me , »  
says the coachman , « I will shoot with you , five  
« guineas a shot. » « You be hanged , » says  
the other , « for five guineas you shall shoot  
« at my a — . » « Done , » says the coachman ,  
« I'll pepper you better than ever you was  
« peppered by Jenny Bouncer. » « Pepper your  
« grandmother , » says the other , « here's  
« Tow-wouse will let you shoot at him for a  
« shilling a-time. » « I know his honour better , »  
cries Tow-wouse , « I never saw a  
« surer shoot at a partridge. Every man mistakes  
« now and then ; but if I could shoot half  
« as well as his honour , I would desire no  
« better livelihood than I could get by my  
« gun. » « Pox on you , » said the coachman ,

« you demolish more game now than your  
 « head's worth: There's a bitch, Tow-wouse,  
 « by G. — she never blinked (a) a bird in her  
 « life. » « I have a puppy not a year old shall  
 « hunt with her for a hundred, » cries the  
 other gentleman. « Done, » says the coach-  
 man; « but you will be pox'd before you  
 « make the bett. If you have a mind for a  
 « bett, » cries the coachman, « I will match  
 « my spotted dog with your white bitch for  
 « a hundred, play or pay. » « Done, » says  
 the other, « and I'll run Baldface against  
 « Slouch with you for another. » « No, »  
 cries he from the box, « but I'll venture Miss  
 « Jenny against Baldface or Hannibal either. »  
 « Go to the devil, » cries he from the coach,  
 « I will make every bett your own way, to  
 « be sure! I will match Hannibal with Slouch  
 « for a thousand, if you dare, and I say done  
 « first. »

They were now arrived, and the reader  
 will be very contented to leave them, and  
 repair to the kitchen, where Barnabas, the  
 surgeon, and an exciseman, were smoaking  
 their pipes over some cyder-and, and where  
 the servants, who attended the two noble gen-  
 tlemen we have just seen alight, were now  
 arrived.

« Tom, » cries one of the footmen, — the-  
 « re's parson Adams smoaking his pipe in the

(a) To blink, is a term used to signify the dog's  
 passing by a bird, without pointing at it.

« gallery. » « Yes, » says Tom, « I pulled  
« off my hat to him, and the parson spoke  
« to me. »

« Is the gentleman a clergyman then ? »  
says Barnabas, ( for his cassock had been tied  
up when he first arrived ). « Yes, Sir, » an-  
swered the footman, « and one there be but  
« few like. » « Aye, » said Barnabas, « if I had  
« known it sooner, I should have desired his  
« company; I would always shew a proper  
« respect for the cloth : but what say you,  
« Doctor, shall we adjourn into a room,  
« and invite him to take part of a bowl of  
« punch ? »

This proposal was immediately agreed to,  
and executed ; and parson Adams accepting  
the invitation, much civility passed between  
the two clergymen, who both declared the  
great honour they had for the cloth. They  
had not been long together, before they en-  
tered into a discourse on small tithes, which  
continued a full hour, without the doctor or  
exciseman's having one opportunity to offer  
a word.

It was then proposed to begin a general  
conversation, and the exciseman opened on  
foreign affairs : but a word unluckily drop-  
ping from one of them, introduced a disser-  
tation on the hardships suffered by the infe-  
rior clergy ; which, after a long duration,  
concluded with bringing the nine volumes of  
sermons on the carpet.

Barnabas greatly discouraged poor Adams; he said, « The age was so wicked, that nobody read sermons : would you think it, » « Mr. Adams, » said he «, I once intended to » « print a volume of sermons myself, and they » « had the approbation of two or three bishops : but what do you think a bookseller » « offered me? » « Twelve guineas, perhaps, » (cried Adams). « Not twelve pence, I assure you, » answered Barnabas : « nay, the » « dog refused me a Concordance in exchange. » — « At last I offered to give him the printing » « them, for the sake of dedicating them to » « that very gentleman who just now drove » « his own coach into the inn ; and I assure » « you he had the impudence to refuse my » « offer : by which means I lost a good living, that was afterwards given away in » « exchange for a pointer, to one who — but » « I will not say any thing against the cloth. » « So you may guess, Mr. Adams, what you » « are to expect ; for if sermons would have » « gone down, I believe — I will not be vain : » « but to be concise with you, three bishops » « said, they were the best that ever were writ : » « but indeed there are a pretty moderate number printed already, and not all sold yet. » — « Pray, Sir, » said Adams, « to what do » « you think the numbers may amount to? » « Sir, » answered Barnabas, « a bookseller told » « me, he believed five thousand volumes at » « least. » « Five thousand ! » quoth the sur-



geon, « what can they be writ upon? I remember, when I was a boy, I used to read one Tillotson's sermons; and I am sure, if a man practised half so much as is in one of those sermons, he will go to heaven. » « Doctor, » cried Barnabas, « you have a profane way of talking, for which I must reprove you. A man can never have his duty too frequently inculcated into him. And as for *Tillotson*, to be sure he was a good writer, and said things very well; but comparisons are odious; another man may write as well as he — I believe there are some of my sermons » — and then he applied the candle to his pipe. — « And I believe there are some of my discourses, » cries Adams, « which the bookshops would not think totally unworthy of being printed; and I have been informed, I might procure a very large sum (indeed an immense one) on them. » « I doubt that, » answered Barnabas; « however, if you desire to make some money of them, perhaps you may sell them by advertising, The manuscript sermons of a clergyman lately deceased, all warranted originals, and never printed. — And now I think of it, I should be obliged to you, if there be ever a funeral one among them, to lend it me: for I am this very day to preach a funeral sermon; for which I have not penned a line, though I am to have a double price. »

« price. » Adams answered, He had but one, which he feared would not serve his purpose, being sacred to the memory of a magistrate, who had exerted himself very singularly in the preservation of the morality of his neighbours, insomuch that he had neither alehouse nor lewd woman in the parish where he lived — « No, » replied Barnabas, « that will « not do quite so well; for the deceased, « upon whose virtues I am to harangue, was « a little too much addicted to liquor, and « publicly kept a mistress. — I believe I must « take a common sermon, and trust to my « memory to introduce something handsome « on him. » — « To your invention rather, » said the doctor, « your memory will be apt-  
er to put you out; for no man living re-  
members any thing good of him. »

With such kind of spiritual discourse they emptied the bowl of punch, paid their reckoning, and separated: Adams and the doctor went up to Joseph, parson Barnabas departed to celebrate the aforesaid deceased, and the exciseman descended into the cellar to gauge the vessels.

Joseph was now ready to sit down to a loin of mutton, and waited for Mr. Adams, when he and the doctor came in. The doctor having felt his pulse, and examined his wounds, declared him much better, which he imputed to that sanative soporiferous draught, « a « medicine, whose virtues, » he said, « were

«never to be sufficiently extolled.» And great indeed they must be, if Joseph was so much indebted to them, as the doctor imagined; since nothing more than those effluvia, which escaped the cork, could have contributed to his recovery: for the medicine had stood untouched in the window ever since its arrival.

Joseph passed that day and the three following with his friend Adams, in which nothing so remarkable happened, as the swift progress of his recovery. As he had an excellent habit of body, his wounds were now almost healed; and his bruises gave him so little uneasiness, that he pressed Mr. Adams to let him depart, told him he should never be able to return sufficient thanks for all his favours; but begged, that he might no longer delay his journey to London.

Adams, notwithstanding the ignorance, as he conceived it, of Mr. Tow-wouse, and the envy (for such he thought it) of Mr. Barnabas, had great expectations from his sermons: seeing, therefore, Joseph in so good a way, he told him he would agree to his setting out the next morning in the stage-coach: that he believed he should have sufficient, after the reckoning paid, to procure him one day's conveyance in it, and afterwards he would be able to get on foot, or might be favoured with a lift in some neighbour's waggon, especially as there was then to be a fair in the

town, whither the coach would carry him, to which numbers from his parish resorted. —And as to himself, he agreed to proceed to the great city.

They were now walking in the inn-yard; when a fat, fair, short person rode in, and alighting from his horse, went directly up to Barnabas, who was smoaking his pipe on a bench. The parson and the stranger shook one another very lovingly by the hand, and went into a room together.

The evening now coming on, Joseph retired to his chamber, whither the good Adams accompanied him; and took this opportunity to expatiate on the great mercies God had lately shewn him, of which he ought not only to have the deepest inward sense, but likewise to express outward thankfulness for them. They therefore fell both on their knees, and spent a considerable time in prayer and thanksgiving.

They had just finished, when Betty came in, and told Mr. Adams, Mr. Barnabas desired to speak to him on some business of consequence below stairs. Joseph desired, if it was likely to detain him long, he would let him know it, that he might go to bed; which Adams promised, and in that case they wished one another good night.

## CHAP. XVII.

*A pleasant discourse between the two parsons and the bookseller, which was broke off by an unlucky accident happening in the inn, which produced a dialogue between Mrs. Tow-wouse and her maid, of no gentle kind,*

AS soon as Adams came into the room; Mr. Barnabas introduced him to the stranger, who was, he told him, a bookseller, and would be as likely to deal with him for his sermons, as any man whatever. Adams, saluting the stranger, answered Barnabas, That he was very much obliged to him; that nothing could be more convenient; for he had no other business to the great city, and was heartily desirous of returning with the young man who was just recovered of his misfortune. He then snap'd his fingers, (as was usual with him), and took two or three turns about the room in an ecstasy. - And to induce the bookseller to be as expeditious as possible, as likewise to offer him a better price for his commodity, he assured him their meeting was extremely lucky to himself: for that he had the most pressing occasion for money at that time, his own being almost spent, and having a friend then in the same inn, who has just recovered

from some wounds he had received from robbers, and was in a most indigent condition ; « So that nothing , » says he , « could be so « opportune for the supplying both our necessities , as my making an immediate bargain « with you. »

As soon as he had seated himself, the stranger began in these words ; « Sir, I do not « care absolutely to deny engaging in what « my friend Mr. Barnabas recommends : but « sermons are mere drugs. The trade is so vastly « stocked with them, that really, unless they « come out with the name of Whitefield or « Wesley, or some other such great man, as « a bishop, or those sort of people, I don't « care to touch, unless now it was a sermon « preached on the 30<sup>th</sup> of January, or we « could say in the title-page, Published at the « earnest request of the congregation, or the « inhabitants : but truly for a dry piece of sermons, I had rather be excused ; especially as « my hands are so full at present. However, « Sir, as Mr. Barnabas mentioned them to « me, I will, if you please, take the manuscript « with me to town, and send you my opinion « of it in a very short time. »

« O, » said Adams, « if you desire it, I « will read two or three discourses as a specimen. » This Barnabas, who loved sermons no better than a grocer doth figs, immediately objected to, and advised Adams to let the bookseller have his sermons ; telling him ;

## CHAP. XVII.

*A pleasant discourse between the two parsons and the bookseller, which was broke off by an unlucky accident happening in the inn, which produced a dialogue between Mrs. Tow-wouse and her maid, of no gentle kind.*

AS soon as Adams came into the room; Mr. Barnabas introduced him to the stranger, who was, he told him, a bookseller, and would be as likely to deal with him for his sermons, as any man whatever. Adams, saluting the stranger, answered Barnabas, That he was very much obliged to him; that nothing could be more convenient; for he had no other business to the great city, and was heartily desirous of returning with the young man who was just recovered of his misfortune. He then snap'd his fingers, (as was usual with him), and took two or three turns about the room in an ecstasy. - And to induce the bookseller to be as expeditious as possible, as likewise to offer him a better price for his commodity, he assured him their meeting was extremely lucky to himself: for that he had the most pressing occasion for money at that time, his own being almost spent, and having a friend then in the same inn, who has just recovered



from some wounds he had received from robbers, and was in a most indigent condition; « So that nothing, » says he, « could be so opportune for the supplying both our necessities, as my making an immediate bargain with you. »

As soon as he had seated himself, the stranger began in these words; « Sir, I do not care absolutely to deny engaging in what my friend Mr. Barnabas recommends: but sermons are mere drugs. The trade is so vastly stocked with them, that really, unless they come out with the name of Whitefield or Wesley, or some other such great man, as a bishop, or those sort of people, I don't care to touch, unless now it was a sermon preached on the 30<sup>th</sup> of January, or we could say in the title-page, Published at the earnest request of the congregation, or the inhabitants: but truly for a dry piece of sermons, I had rather be excused; especially as my hands are so full at present. However, Sir, as Mr. Barnabas mentioned them to me, I will, if you please, take the manuscript with me to town, and send you my opinion of it in a very short time. »

« O, » said Adams, « if you desire it, I will read two or three discourses as a specimen. » This Barnabas, who loved sermons no better than a grocer doth figs, immediately objected to, and advised Adams to let the bookseller have his sermons; telling him;

if he gave him a direction, he might be certain of a speedy answer : adding , he need not scruple trusting them in his possession. « No , » said the bookseller , « if it was a play that had been acted twenty nights together , I believe it would be safe. »

Adams did not at all relish the last expression ; he said , he was sorry to hear sermons compared to plays. « Not by me , I assure you , » cried the bookseller , « tho' I don't know whether the licensing act may not shortly bring them to the same footing : but I have formerly known a hundred guineas given for a play. » — « More shame for those who gave it , » cried Barnabas. « Why so ? » said the bookseller , « for they got hundreds by it. » « But is there no difference between conveying good or ill instructions to mankind ? » said Adams ; « would not an honest mind rather lose money by the one , than gain it by the other ? » « If you can find any such , I will not be their hindrance , » answered the bookseller ; « but I think those persons who get by preaching sermons , are the properest to lose by printing them : for my part , the copy that sells best , will be always the best copy in my opinion ; I am no enemy to sermons , but because they don't sell : for I would as soon print one of Whitefield's , as any farce whatever. »

« Whoever prints such heterodox stuff ,

« ought to be hanged, » says Barnabas.  
 « Sir, » said he, turning to Adams, « this  
 « fellow's writings ( I know not whether  
 « you have seen them ), are levelled at the  
 « clergy. He would reduce us to the example  
 « of the primitive ages, forsooth ! and would  
 « insinuate to the people that a clergyman  
 « ought to be always preaching and praying.  
 « He pretends to understand the scripture li-  
 « terally, and would make mankind believe,  
 « that the poverty and low estate, which was  
 « recommended to the church in its infancy,  
 « and was only a temporary doctrine adapted  
 « to her under persecution, was to be pre-  
 « served in her flourishing and established  
 « state. Sir, the principles of Toland, Wool-  
 « ston, and all the freethinkers, are not cal-  
 « culated to do half the mischief, as those pro-  
 « fessed by this fellow and his followers. »

« Sir, » answered Adams, « if Mr. White-  
 « field had carried this doctrine no farther  
 « than you mention, I should have remain-  
 « ed, as I once was, his well wisher. I  
 « am myself as great an enemy to the  
 « luxury and splendor of the clergy, as he  
 « can be. I do not, more than he, by the  
 « flourishing estate of the church, understand  
 « the palaces, equipages, dress, furniture,  
 « rich dainties, and vast fortunes of her mi-  
 « nisters. Surely those things, which favour  
 « so strongly of this world, become not the  
 « servants of one who professed his kingdom

« was not of it : but when he began to call  
« nonsense and enthusiasm to his aid , and  
« set up the detestable doctrine of faith  
« against good works , I was his friend no  
« longer ; for surely that doctrine was  
« coined in hell , and one would think none  
« but the devil himself could have the con-  
« fidence to preach it. For can any thing be  
« more derogatory to the honour of God,  
« than for men to imagine , that the all-wise  
« Being will hereafter say to the good and  
« virtuous , « Notwithstanding the purity of  
« thy life , notwithstanding that constant rule  
« of virtue and goodness in which you have  
« walked upon earth , still , as thou didst not  
« believe every thing in the true orthodox  
« manner , thy want of faith shall condemn  
« thee? » Or , on the other side , can any doc-  
« trine have a more pernicious influence on  
« society than a persuasion , that it will be a  
« good plea for the villain at the last day , «  
« Lord , it is true I never obeyed one of thy  
« commands ; yet punish me not , for I be-  
« lieve them all? » « I suppose , Sir , » said  
the bookseller , « your sermons are of a differ-  
« ent kind. » « Aye , Sir , » said Adams , « the  
« contrary , I thank Heaven , is inculcated in  
« almost every page , or I should belie my  
« own opinion , which hath always been ,  
« that a virtuous and good Turk , or heath-  
« en , are more acceptable in the sight of  
« their Creator , than a vicious and wicked

« Christian, though his faith was as perfectly  
 « orthodox as St Paul's himself. » — « I wish  
 « you success, » says the bookseller, « but  
 « must beg to be excused, as my hands are  
 « so very full at present; and indeed I am  
 « afraid you will find a backwardness in the  
 « trade to engage in a book which the clergy  
 « would be certain to cry down. » « God  
 « forbid, » says Adams, « any books should  
 « be propagated which the clergy would cry  
 « down: but if you mean by the clergy some  
 « few designing factious men, who have it at  
 « heart to establish some favourite schemes  
 « at the price of the liberty of mankind,  
 « and the very essence of religion, it is not  
 « in the power of such persons to decry any  
 « book they please; witness that excellent  
 « book called, « A plain account of the na-  
 « ture and end of the sacrament; » a book  
 « written (if I may venture on the expres-  
 « sion) with the pen of an angel, and cal-  
 « culated to restore the true use of Christian-  
 « ity, and of that sacred institution: for  
 « what could tend more to the noble pur-  
 « poses of religion, than frequent chearful  
 « meetings among the members of a so-  
 « ciety, in which they should, in the pre-  
 « sence of one another, and in the service  
 « of the Supreme Being, make promises of  
 « being good, friendly, and benevolent to  
 « each other? Now this excellent book was  
 « attacked by a party, but unsuccessfully. »

At these words Barnabas fell a ringing with all the violence imaginable; upon which a servant attending, he bid him «bring a bill «immediately, for that he was in company, «for aught he knew, with the devil himself; «and he expected to hear the Alcoran, the «Leviathan, or Woolston commended, if he «staid a few minutes longer.» Adams desired, «as he was so much moved at his mentioning a book, which he did without apprehending any possibility of offence, that «he would be so kind to propose any objections he had to it, which he would endeavour to answer.» «I, propose objections!» said Barnabas, «I never read a syllable in any «such wicked book; I never saw it in my «life, I assure you.» — Adams was going to answer, when a most hideous uproar began in the inn, Mrs Tow-wouse, and Betty, all lifting up their voices together: but Mrs Tow-wouse's voice, like a bass viol in a concert, was clearly and distinctly distinguished among the rest, and was heard to articulate the following sounds, — «O you damn'd villain, is «this the return to all the care I have taken «of your family? this the reward of my virtue? Is this the manner in which you behave «to one who brought you a fortune, and «preferred you to so many matches, all your «betters? to abuse my bed, my own bed, «with my own servant: but I'll maul the «slut, I'll tear her nasty eyes out. Was ever

« such a pitiful dog, to take up with such a  
 « mean trollop? If she had been a gentlewo-  
 « man like myself, it had been some excuse;  
 « but a beggarly saucy dirty servant-maid,—  
 « Get you out of my house, you whore. »  
 To which she added another name, which  
 we do not care to stain our paper with. It  
 was a monosyllable beginning with a b—,  
 and indeed was the same as if she had pro-  
 nounced the words, She-dog. Which term  
 we shall, to avoid offence, use on this occa-  
 sion; though, indeed, both the mistress and  
 maid uttered the abovementioned b—, a  
 word extremely disgustful to females of the  
 lower sort. Betty had born all hitherto with  
 patience, and had uttered only lamentations;  
 but the last appellation stung her to the quick.  
 « I am a woman as well as yourself, » she  
 roared out, « and no she-dog, and if I have  
 « been a little naughty, I am not the first;  
 « if I have been no better than I should be, »  
 cries she sobbing, « that's no reason you  
 « should call me out of my name; my  
 « betters are worse than me. » « Huzzy »,  
 « huzzy, » says Mrs Tow-wouse, « have  
 « you the impudence to answer me? Did I  
 « not catch you, you saucy — » and then  
 again repeated the terrible word so odious  
 to female ears. « I can't bear that name, »  
 answered Betty: « if I have been wicked, I  
 « am to answer for it myself in the other  
 « world; but I have done nothing that's un-



« natural; and I will go out of your house  
« this moment, for I will never be called  
« She-dog by any mistress in England »  
Mrs Tow-wouse then armed herself with the  
spit, but was prevented from executing any  
dreadful purpose by Mr Adams, who confin-  
ed her arms with the strength of a wrist,  
which Hercules would not have been asham-  
ed of. Mr Tow-wouse being caught, as  
our lawyers express it, with the manner,  
and having no defence to make, very pru-  
dently withdrew himself, and Betty commit-  
ted herself to the protection of the hostler,  
who, though she could not conceive him  
pleased with what had happened, was, in  
her opinion, rather a gentler beast than her  
mistress.

Mrs Tow-wouse, at the intercession of  
Mr Adams, and finding the enemy vanished,  
began to compose herself, and at length re-  
covered the usual serenity of her temper, in  
which we will leave her, to open to the  
reader the steps which led to a catastrophe  
common enough, and comical enough too,  
perhaps in modern history, yet often fatal to  
the repose and well-being of families, and  
the subject of many tragedies, both in life,  
and on the stage.

## CHAP. XVIII.

*The history of Betty the chambermaid, and an account of what occasioned the violent scene in the preceding chapter.*

BETTY, who was the occasion of all this hurry, had some good qualities. She had good-nature, generosity and compassion; but unfortunately, her constitution was composed of those warm ingredients, which, though the purity of courts or nunneries might have happily controlled them, were by no means able to endure the ticklish situation of a chambermaid at an inn, who is daily liable to the solicitations of lovers of all complexions, to the dangerous addresses of fine gentlemen of the army, who sometimes are obliged to reside with them a whole year together; and above all, are exposed to the caresses of footmen, stage-coachmen, and drawers; all of whom employ the whole artillery of kissing, flattering, bribing, and every other weapon which is to be found in the whole armoury of love, against them.

Betty, who was but one-and-twenty, had now lived three years in this dangerous situation, during which she had escaped pretty well. An ensign of foot was the first person

110      The ADVENTURES of

who made an impression on her heart: he did indeed raise a flame in her, which required the care of a surgeon to cool.

While she burnt for him, several others burnt for her. Officers of the army, young gentlemen travelling the western circuit, inoffensive squires, and some of graver character were set a fire by her charms.

At length having perfectly recovered the effects of her first unhappy passion, she seemed to have vowed a state of perpetual chastity. She was long deaf to all the sufferings of her lovers; till one day, at a neighbouring fair, the rhetoric of John the hostler, with a new straw hat, and a pint of wine, made a second conquest over her.

She did not, however, feel any of those flames on this occasion, which had been the consequence of her former amour; nor indeed those other ill effects, which prudent young women very justly apprehend from too absolute an indulgence to the pressing endearments of their lovers. This latter, perhaps, was a little owing to her not being entirely constant to John, with whom she permitted Tom Whipwell the stage-coachman, and now and then a handsome young traveller, to share her favours.

Mr Tow-wouse had for some time cast the languishing eyes of affection on this young maiden. He had laid hold of every opportunity of saying tender things to her,

squeezing her by the hand, and sometimes kissing her lips : for, as the violence of his passion had considerably abated to Mrs Tow-wouse, so, like water, which is stopt from its usual current in one place, it naturally sought a vent in another. Mrs Tow-wouse is thought to have perceived this abatement, and probably it added very little to the natural sweetness of her temper; for though she was as true to her husband, as the dial to the sun, she was rather more desirous of being shone on, as being more capable of feeling his warmth.

Ever since Joseph's arrival, Betty had conceived an extraordinary liking to him, which discovered itself more and more, as he grew better and better; till that fatal evening, when, as she was warming his bed, her passion grew to such a height, and so perfectly mastered both her modesty and her reason, that after many fruitless hints, and sly insinuations, she at last threw down the warming-pan, and embracing him with great eagerness, swore he was the handsomest creature she had ever seen.

Joseph in great confusion leaped from her, and told her, he was sorry to see a young woman cast off all regard to modesty: but she had gone too far to recede, and grew so very indecent; that Joseph was obliged, contrary to his inclination, to use some violence to her, and taking her in his arms,

III      The ADVENTURES of.

he shut her out of the room, and locked the door.

How ought man to rejoice that his chastity is always in his own power, that if he hath sufficient strength of mind, he hath always a competent strength of body to defend himself, and cannot, like a poor weak woman, be ravished against his will!

Betty was in the most violent agitation at this disappointment. Rage and Lust pulled her heart, as with two strings, two different ways; one moment she thought of stabbing Joseph, the next of taking him in her arms, and devouring him with kisses: but the latter passion was far more prevalent. Then she thought of revenging his refusal on herself: but whilst she was engaged in this meditation, happily Death presented himself to her in so many shapes of drowning, hanging, poisoning, &c. that her distracted mind could resolve on none. In this perturbation of spirit, it accidentally occurred to her memory, that her master's bed was not made; she therefore went directly to his room, where he happened at that time to be engaged at his bureau. As soon as she saw him, she attempted to retire, but he called her back, and taking her by the hand, squeezed her so tenderly, at the same time whispered so many soft things into her ears, and then pressed her so closely with his kisses, that the vanquished fair-one, whose pas-

sions were already raised, and which were not so whimsically capricious, that one man only could lay them, though, perhaps, she would rather have preferred that one; the vanquished fair-one quietly submitted, I say, to her master's will, who had just attained the accomplishment of his bliss, when Mrs Tow-wouse unexpectedly entered the room, and caused all that confusion which we have before seen, and which it is not necessary at present to take any farther notice of; since, without the assistance of a single hint from us, every reader of any speculation or experience, though not married himself, may easily conjecture, that it concluded with the discharge of Betty, the submission of Mr Tow-wouse, with some things to be performed on his side, by way of gratitude, for his wife's goodness in being reconciled to him, with many hearty promises never to offend any more in the like manner; and lastly, his quietly and contentedly bearing to be reminded of his transgressions, as a kind of penance, once or twice a-day, during the residue of his life.

## B O O K I I.

## C H A P. I.

*Of divisions in authors.*

**T**HERE are certain mysteries or secrets in all trades, from the highest to the lowest, from that of prime-ministring to this of authoring, which are seldom discovered, unless to members of the same calling. Among those used by us gentlemen of the latter occupation, I take this of dividing our works into books and chapters, to be none of the least considerable. Now, for want of being truly acquainted with this secret, common readers imagine, that, by this art of dividing, we mean only to swell our works to a much larger bulk, than they would otherwise be extended to. These several places therefore in our paper, which are filled with our books and chapters, are understood as so much buckram, stays, and stay-tape in a tailor's bill, serving only to make up the sum total, commonly found at the bottom of our first page, and of his last.

But in reality the case is otherwise; and in this, as well as in all other instances, we consult the advantage of our reader, not our own. And indeed many notable uses arise to him from



this method: for, first, those little spaces between our chapters may be looked on as an inn or resting-place, where he may stop and take a glass, or any other refreshment, as it pleases him. Nay, our fine readers will, perhaps, be scarce able to travel farther than through one of them in a day. As to those vacant pages which are placed between our books, they are to be regarded as those stages, where, in long journies, the traveller stays some time to repose himself, and consider of what he hath seen in the parts he hath already past through: a consideration which I take the liberty to recommend a little to the reader; for however swift his capacity may be, I would not advise him to travel through these pages too fast; for if he doth, he may probably miss the seeing some curious productions of nature, which will be observed by the slower and more accurate reader. A volume, without any such places of rest, resembles the opening of wilds or seas, which tires the eye, and fatigues the spirit when entered upon.

Secondly, what are the contents prefixed to every chapter, but so many inscriptions over the gates of inns, (to continue the same metaphor), informing the reader what entertainment he is to expect, which, if he likes not, he may travel on to the next? For, in biography, as we are not tied down to an exact concatenation equally with other histor-

ians, so a chapter or two (for instance, this I am now writing) may be often passed over, without any injury to the whole. And in these inscriptions I have been as faithful as possible; not imitating the celebrated Montaigne, who promises you one thing and gives you another; nor some title-page authors, who promise a great deal, and produce nothing at all.

There are, besides these more obvious benefits, several others which our readers enjoy from this art of dividing, though, perhaps, most of them too mysterious to be presently understood by any who are not initiated into the science of authoring. To mention therefore but one which is most obvious, it prevents spoiling the beauty of a book by turning down its leaves, a method otherwise necessary to those readers, who (though they read with great improvement and advantage) are apt, when they return to their study, after half an hour's absence, to forget where they left off.

These divisions have the sanction of great antiquity. Homer not only divided his great work into twenty-four books, (in compliment perhaps to the twenty-four letters, to which he had very particular obligations), but, according to the opinion of some very sagacious critics, hawked them all separately, delivering only one book at a time, (probably by subscription.) He was the first

inventor of the art, which hath so long lain dormant, of publishing by numbers, an art now brought to such perfection, that even dictionaries are divided, and exhibited piecemeal to the public; nay, one bookseller hath (to encourage learning and ease the public) contrived to give them a dictionary in this divided manner, for only fifteen shillings more than it would have cost entire.

Virgil hath given us his poems in twelve books, an argument of his modesty; for, by that, doubtless, he would insinuate that he pretends to no more than half the merit of the Greek: for the same reason, our Milton went originally no farther than ten; 'till being puffed up by the praise of his friends, he put himself on the same footing with the Roman poet.

I shall not, however, enter so deep into this matter as some very learned critics have done, who have, with infinite labour and acute discernment, discovered what books are proper for embellishment, and what require simplicity only, particularly with regard to families, which I think are now generally agreed to become any book but the first.

I will dismiss this chapter with the following observation; that it becomes an author generally to divide a book, as it does a butcher to joint his meat; for such assistance is of great help to both the reader and the carver. And now having indulged myself a little,

I will endeavour to indulge the curiosity of my reader, who is, no doubt, impatient to know what he will find in the subsequent chapters of this book.

## CHAP. II.

*A surprising instance of Mr Adams's short memory, with the unfortunate consequences which it brought on Joseph.*

**M**R Adams and Joseph were now ready to depart different ways, when an accident determined the former to return with his friend, which Tow-wouse, Barnabas, and the bookseller, had not been able to do. This accident was, that those sermons, which the parson was travelling to London to publish, were, O my good reader! left behind; what he had mistaken for them in the saddle-bags, being no other than three shirts, a pair of shoes, and some other necessities, which Mrs Adams, who thought her husband would want shirts more than sermons on his journey, had carefully provided him.

This discovery was now luckily owing to the presence of Joseph at the opening the saddle-bags; who having heard his friend say, he carried with him nine volumes of sermons, and not being of that sect of phi-

losophers who can reduce all the matter of the world into a nut-shell, seeing there was no room for them in the bags, where the parson had said they were deposited, had the curiosity to cry out, « Bless me, Sir, where « are your sermons? » The parson answered, « There, there, child, there they are « under my shirts. » Now it happened that he had taken forth his last shirt, and the vehicle remained visibly empty. « Sure, Sir, » says Joseph, « there is nothing in the bags. » Upon which Adams starting, and testifying some surprize, cried, « Hey! fy, fy upon « it; they are not here, sure enough. Aye, « they are certainly left behind. »

Joseph was greatly concerned at the uneasiness which he apprehended his friend must feel from this disappointment: he begged him to pursue his journey, and promised he would himself return with the books to him with the utmost expedition. « No, thank « you, child, » answered Adams, « it shall « not be so. What would it avail me to tarry « in the great city, unless I had my discourses « with me, which are, *ut ita dicam*, the « sole cause, the *aitia monotote* of my peregrination. No, child, as this accident hath « happened, I am resolved to return back to « my cure together with you; which indeed « my inclination sufficiently leads me to. « This disappointment may perhaps be intended for my good. He concluded with a

« verse out of Theocritus, which signifies no more than, that sometimes it rains, and sometimes the sun shines. »

Joseph bowed with obedience and thankfulness for the inclination which the parson expressed of returning with him; and now the bill was called for, which, on examination, amounted within a shilling to the sum Mr Adams had in his pocket. Perhaps the reader may wonder how he was able to produce a sufficient sum for so many days: that he may not be surprised therefore, it cannot be unnecessary to acquaint him, that he had borrowed a guinea of a servant belonging to the coach and six, who had been formerly one of his parishioners, and whose master, the owner of the coach, then lived within three miles of him: for so good was the credit of Mr Adams, that even Mr Peter, the Lady Booby's steward, would have lent him a guinea with very little security.

Mr Adams discharged the bill, and they were both setting out, having agreed to ride and tie, a method of travelling much used by persons who have but one horse between them, and is thus performed. The two travellers set out together, one on horseback, the other on foot. Now, as it generally happens that he on horseback outgoes him on foot, the custom is, that when he arrives at the distance agreed on, he is to dismount, tie the horse to some gate, tree, post, or other

other thing; and then proceed on foot; when the other comes up to the horse, he unties him, mounts and gallops on, 'till having passed by his fellow-traveller, he likewise arrives at the place of tying. And this is that method of travelling so much in use among our prudent ancestors, who knew that horses had mouths as well as legs, and that they could not use the latter, without being at the expence of suffering the beasts themselves to use the former. This was the method in use in those days, when, instead of a coach and six, a member of parliament's lady used to mount a pillion behind her husband; and a grave serjeant at law condescended to amble to Westminster on an easy pad, with his clerk kicking his heels behind him.

Adams was now gone some minutes, having insisted on Joseph's beginning the journey on horseback, and Joseph had his foot in the stirrup, when the hostler presented him a bill for the horse's board, during his residence at the inn. Joseph said Mr Adams had paid all; but the matter being referred to Mr Tow-wouse, was by him decided in favour of the hostler, and indeed with truth and justice; for this was a fresh instance of that shortness of memory, which did not arise from want of parts, but that continual hurry in which parson Adams was always involved.

Joseph was now reduced to a dilemma

VOL. I.

F



which extremely puzzled him. The sum due for horse-meat was twelve shillings, ( for Adams , who had borrowed the beast of his clerk , had ordered him to be fed as well as they could feed him ), and the cash in his pocket amounted to sixpence , ( for Adams had divided the last shilling with him. ) Now, though there have been some ingenious persons who have contrived to pay twelve shillings with sixpence , Joseph was not one of them. He had never contracted a debt in his life, and was consequently the less ready at an expedient to extricate himself. Tow-wouse was willing to give him credit 'till next time, to which Mrs Tow-wouse would probably have consented , ( for such was Joseph's beauty, that it had made some impression even on that piece of flint which that good woman wore in her bosom by way of heart. ) Joseph would have found therefore, very likely, the passage free, had he not, when he honestly discovered the nakedness of his pockets, pulled out that little piece of gold which we have mentioned before. This caused Mrs Tow-wouse's eyes to water. She told Joseph, she did not conceive a man could want money whilst he had gold in his pocket. Joseph answered, he had such a value for that little piece of gold, that he would not part with it, for a hundred times the riches which the greatest esquire in the country was worth. « A pretty way indeed , » said Mrs Tow-

wouse, « to run in debt, and then refuse to  
 « part with your money, because you have  
 « a value for it. I never knew any piece of  
 « gold of more value than as many shillings  
 « as it would change for. » « Not to preserve  
 « my life from starving, not to redeem it  
 « from a robber, would I part with this dear  
 « piece, » answered Joseph. « What, » said  
 Mrs Tow-wouse, « I suppose it was given  
 « you by some vile trollop, some miss or  
 « other; if it had been the present of a virtu-  
 « ous woman, you would not have had  
 « such a value for it. My husband is a fool, if  
 « he parts with the horse without being paid  
 « for him. » « No, no, I can't part with the  
 « horse indeed till I have the money, » cried  
 Tow-wouse. A resolution highly commend-  
 ed by a lawyer then in the yard, who de-  
 clared Mr Tow-wouse might justify the  
 detainer.

As we cannot therefore, at present, get Mr  
 Joseph out of the inn, we shall leave him in  
 it, and carry our reader on after parson  
 Adams, who, his mind being perfectly at  
 ease, fell into a contemplation on a passage  
 in *Æschylus*, which entertained him for three  
 miles together, without suffering him once  
 to reflect on his fellow-traveller.

At length, having spun out his thread,  
 and being now at the summit of a hill, he  
 cast his eyes backwards, and wondered that  
 he could not see any sign of Joseph. As he

left him ready to mount the horse, he could not apprehend any mischief had happened, neither could he suspect that he missed his way, it being so broad and plain. The only reason which presented itself to him was, that he had met with an acquaintance who had prevailed with him to delay some time in discourse.

He therefore resolved to proceed slowly forwards, not doubting but that he should be shortly overtaken, and soon came to a large water, which filling the whole road, he saw no method of passing, unless by wading through, which he accordingly did up to his middle; but was no sooner got to the other side, than he perceived, if he had looked over the hedge, he would have found a foot-path capable of conducting him, without wetting his shoes.

His surprise at Joseph's not coming up grew now very troublesome. He began to fear he knew not what; and as he determined to move no farther, and, if he did not shortly overtake him, to return back, he wished to find a house of public entertainment, where he might dry his cloaths, and refresh himself with a pint; but seeing no such, (for no other reason, than because he did not cast his eyes a hundred yards forwards), he sat himself down on a stile, and pulled out his *Æschylus*.

A fellow passing presently by, Adams

asked him, if he could direct him to an ale-house. The fellow, who had just left it, and perceived the house and sign to be within sight, thinking he had jeered him, and being of a morose temper, bade him follow his nose and be d—n'd. Adams told him he was a saucy jackanapes; upon which the fellow turned about angrily; but perceiving Adams clinch his fist, he thought proper to go on, without taking any farther notice.

A horseman following immediately after, and being ask'd the same question, answered, « Friend, there is one, within a stone's throw; I believe you may see it before you. » Adams, lifting up his eyes, cried, « I protest, and so there is; » and, thanking his informer, proceeded directly to it.

### CHAP. III.

*The opinion of two lawyers concerning the same gentleman, with Mr Adams's inquiry into the religion of his host.*

HE had just entered the house, had called for his pint, and seated himself, when two horsemen came to the door, and, fastening their horses to the rails, alighted. They said there was a violent shower of rain coming on, which they intended to weather there,

and went into a little room by themselves, not perceiving Mr Adams.

One of these immediately asked the other, if he had seen a more comical adventure, a great while? Upon which the other said, « he doubted whether, by law, the landlord could justify detaining the horse for his own corn and hay. » But the former answered, « Undoubtedly he can; it is an adjudged case, and I have known it tried. »

Adams, who, tho' he was, as the reader may suspect, a little inclined to forgetfulness, never wanted more than a hint to remind him, over-hearing their discourse, immediately suggested to himself that this was his own horse, and that he had forgot to pay for him, which, upon enquiry, he was certified of, by the gentlemen, who added, that the horse was likely to have more rest than food, unless he was paid for.

The poor parson resolved to return presently to the inn, though he knew no more than Joseph, how to procure his horse his liberty: he was, however, prevailed on to stay under cover till the shower, which was now very violent, was over.

The three travellers then sat down together over a mug of good beer; when Adams, who had observed a gentleman's house as he passed along the road, inquired to whom it belonged. One of the horsemen had no sooner mentioned the owner's name, than the other

began to revile him in the most opprobrious terms. The English language scarce affords a single reproachful word, which he did not vent on this occasion. He charged him likewise with many particular facts. He said, —  
 « he no more regarded a field of wheat, when  
 « he was hunting, than he did the highway ;  
 « that he had injured several poor farmers ,  
 « by trampling their corn under his horse's  
 « heels : and if any of them begged him ,  
 « with the utmost submission, to refrain , his  
 « horse-whip was always ready to do them  
 « justice. » He said, « that he was the greatest  
 « tyrant to the neighbours in every other  
 « instance, and would not suffer a farmer to  
 « keep a gun, though he might justify it by  
 « law ; and to his own family so cruel a master ,  
 « that he never kept a servant a twelve-  
 « month. In his capacity as a justice , » continued he , « he behaves so partially , that he  
 « commits or acquits just as he is in the humour, without any regard to truth or evidence : the devil may carry any one before  
 « him for me ; I would rather be tried before  
 « some judges, than be a prosecutor before  
 « him. If I had an estate in the neighbourhood , I would sell it for half the value ,  
 « rather than live near him. »

Adams shook his head, and said, « He was  
 « sorry such men were suffered to proceed with  
 « impunity, and that riches could set any man  
 « above law. » The reviler a little after retiring

into the yard, the gentleman who had first mentioned his name to Adams, began to assure him, « that his companion was a pre-judiced person. It is true, » says he, « perhaps, that he may have sometimes pursued his game over a field of corn, but he hath always made the party ample satisfaction; that, so far from tyrannizing over his neighbours, or taking away their guns, he himself knew several farmers not qualified, who not only kept guns, but killed game with them. That he was the best of masters to his servants, and several of them had grown old in his service. That he was the best justice of peace in the kingdom, and, to his certain knowledge, had decided many difficult points, which were referred to him, with the greatest equity, and the highest wisdom. And he verily believed, several persons would give a year's purchase more, for an estate near him, than under the wings of any other great man. » He had just finished his encomium, when his companion returned, and acquainted him the storm was over. Upon which they presently mounted their horses and departed.

Adams, who was in the utmost anxiety at those different characters of the same person, asked his host if he knew the gentleman: for he began to imagine they had, by mistake, been speaking of two several gentlemen. « No, no, Master ! » answered the host, a



shrewd cunning fellow, "I know the gentleman very well, of whom they have been speaking, as I do the gentlemen who spoke of him. As for riding over other men's corn, to my knowledge, he hath not been on horseback these two years. I never heard he did any injury of that kind; and as to making reparation, he is not so free of his money as that comes to neither. Nor did I ever hear of his taking away any man's gun; nay, I know several who have guns in their houses: but as for killing game with them, no man is stricter; and I believe he would ruin any who did. You heard one of the gentlemen say, he was the worst master in the world, and the other that he is the best: but for my own part, I know all his servants, and never heard from any of them that he was either one or the other."—"Aye, aye," says Adams, "and how doth he behave as a justice, pray?" "Faith, friend," answered the host, "I question whether he is in the commission: the only cause I have heard he hath decided a great while, was one between those very two persons who just went out of this house; and I am sure he determined that justly, for I heard the whole matter." "Which did he decide it in favour of?" quoth Adams. "I think I need not answer that question," cried the host, "after the different characters you have heard

« of him. It is not my business to contradict  
« gentlemen, while they are drinking in my  
« house; but I knew neither of them spoke  
« a syllable of truth. » « God forbid! » said  
Adams, « that men should arrive at such a  
« pitch of wickedness, to belie the character of  
« their neighbour from a little private affec-  
« tion; or, what is infinitely worse, private  
« spite. I rather believe we have mistaken  
« them, and they mean two other persons:  
« for there are many houses on the road. »  
« Why, prithee, friend, » cries the host, «  
« dost thou pretend never to have told a lie  
« in thy life? » « Never a malicious one, I  
« am certain, » answered Adams; « nor with  
« a design to injure the reputation of any  
« man living. » « Pugh! malicious; no, no, »  
replied the host; « not malicious with a de-  
« sign to hang a man, or bring him into  
« trouble: but surely, out of love to one's self,  
« one must speak better of a friend than an  
« enemy. » « Out of love to yourself, you  
« should confine yourself to truth, » says  
Adams; « for by doing otherwise, you injure  
« the noblest part of yourself, your immortal  
« soul. I can hardly believe any man such an  
« idiot to risque the loss of that, by any  
« trifling gain, and the greatest gain in this  
« world is but dirt in comparison of what  
« shall be revealed hereafter. » Upon which  
the host, taking up the cup, with a smile,  
drank a health to Hereafter: adding, he was

for something present. « Why, » says Adams very gravely, « Do not you believe another world? » To which the host answered, Yes, he was no atheist. « And you believe you have an immortal soul? » cries Adams. He answered, « God forbid he should not. » « And heaven, and hell? » said the parson. The host then bid him not to profane; for those were things not to be mentioned, nor thought of, but in church. Adams asked him, Why he went to church, if what he learned there had no influence on his conduct in life? « I go to church, » answered the host, « to say my prayers, and behave godly. » « And dost not thou, » cried Adams, « believe what thou hearest at church? » « Most part of it, » Master, » returned the host. « And dost not thou then tremble, » cries Adams, « at the thought of eternal punishment? » « As for that, Master, » said he, « I never once thought about it. But what signifies talking about matters so far off? The mug is out, shall I draw another? »

Whilst he was going for that purpose, a stage-coach drove up to the door. The coachman coming into the house, was asked by the mistress, What passengers he had in his coach? « A parcel of squinny-gut b—s. » says he, « I have a good mind to overturn them; you won't prevail upon them to drink any thing, I assure you. » Adams asked him, If he had not seen a young man on horse-

back, on the road, (describing Joseph). «Aye,» said the coachman, «a gentlewoman «in my coach, that is his acquaintance, re- «deemed him and his horse; he would have «been here before this time, had not the «storm driven him to shelter.» «God bless «her,» said Adams, in a rapture, nor could he delay walking out, to satisfy himself who this charitable woman was; but what was his surprise, when he saw his old acquaintance Madam Slipslop? Her's indeed was not so great, because she had been informed by Joseph that he was on the road. Very civil were the salutations on both sides; and Mrs Slipslop rebuked the hostess, for denying the gentleman to be there, when she asked for him. But indeed the poor woman had not erred designedly: for Mrs Slipslop asked for a clergyman; and she had unhappily mistaken Adams for a person travelling to a neighbouring fair, with the thimble and button, or some other such operation: for he marched in a swinging great, but short white coat, with black buttons, a short wig, and a hat, which, so far from having a black hat-band, had nothing black about it.

Joseph was now come up, and Mrs Slipslop would have had him quit his horse to the parson, and come himself into the coach; but he absolutely refused, saying, He thanked Heaven he was well enough recovered to be very able to ride; and added, He hoped

he knew his duty better, than to ride in a coach, while Mr Adams was on horseback.

Mrs Slipshod would have persisted longer, had not a lady in the coach put a short end to the dispute, by refusing to suffer a fellow in a livery to ride in the same coach with herself. So it was at length agreed that Adams should fill the vacant place in the coach, and Joseph should proceed on horseback.

They had not proceeded far, before Mrs Slipshod, addressing herself to the parson, spake thus: « There hath been a strange alteration in our family, Mr Adams, since Sir « Thomas's death. » « A strange alteration indeed! » says Adams, « as I gather from « some hints which have dropped from Joseph. » « Aye, » says she, « I could never « have believed it; but the longer one lives « in the world, the more one sees. So Joseph hath given you hints. » — « But of « what nature will always remain a perfect « secret with me, » cries the parson, « he « forced me to promise, before he would communicate any thing. I am indeed concerned « to find her ladyship behave in so unbecoming a manner. I always thought her, « in the main, a good lady, and should never « have suspected her of thoughts so unworthy « a Christian, and with a young lad her own « servant. » « These things are no secrets to « me, I assure you, » cries Slipshod; « and « I believe they will be none any where

« shortly : for, ever since the boy's departure,  
 « she hath behaved more like a mad woman  
 « than any thing else. » « Truly, I am hearti-  
 « ly concerned, » says Adams, « for she  
 « was a good sort of a lady ; indeed I have  
 « often wished she had attended a little more  
 « constantly at the service ; but she hath done  
 « a great deal of good in the parish. » « O  
 « Mr Adams ! » says Slipslop, « people that  
 « don't see all, often know nothing. Many  
 « things have been given away in our family,  
 « I do assure you, without her knowledge.  
 « I have heard you say in the pulpit, We  
 « ought not to brag : but indeed I can't avoid  
 « saying, if she had kept keys herself, the  
 « poor would have wanted many a cordial  
 « which I have let them have. As for my late  
 « master, he was as worthy a man as ever  
 « lived, and would have done infinite good,  
 « if he had not been controlled : but he loved  
 « a quiet life, Heavens rest his soul ! I am  
 « confident he is there, and enjoys a quiet  
 « life, which some folks would not allow  
 « him here. » Adams answered, He had  
 never heard this before, and was mistaken,  
 if she herself ( for he remembered she  
 used to commend her mistress, and blame  
 her master ) had not formerly been of an-  
 other opinion. « I don't know, » replied she,  
 « what I might once think ; but now I am  
 « *confidous* matters are as I tell you: the  
 « world will shortly see who hath been

« deceived ; for my part I say nothing, but that  
 « it is *wonderful* how people can carry all  
 « things with a grave face. »

Thus M. Adams and she discoursed, 'till they came opposite to a great house which stood at some distance from the road ; a lady in the coach spying it, cried, « Yonder lives « the unfortunate Leonora, if one can justly « call a woman unfortunate, whom we must « own, at the same time, guilty, and the au- « thor of her own calamity. » This was abundantly sufficient to awaken the curiosity of Mr Adams, as indeed it did that of the whole company, who jointly solicited the lady to acquaint them with Leonora's history, since it seemed, by what she had said, to contain something remarkable.

The lady, who was perfectly well bred, did not require many intreaties, and having only wished their entertainment might make amends for the company's attention, she began in the following manner.

#### C H A P. I V.

*The history of Leonora, or the unfortunate jilt.*

LEONORA was the daughter of a gentleman of fortune ; she was tall and well-shaped, with a sprightliness in her countenance, which often attracts beyond more regular features, joined with an insipid air ; nor is this kind



of beauty less apt to deceive than allure; the good-humour which it indicates being often mistaken for good-nature, and the vivacity for true understanding.

Leonora, who was now at the age of eighteen, lived with an aunt of her's, in a town in the north of England. She was an extreme lover of gaiety; and very rarely missed a ball, or any other public assembly; where she had frequent opportunities of satisfying a greedy appetite of vanity, with the preference which was given her, by the men, to almost every other woman present.

Among many young fellows who were particular in their gallantries towards her, Horatio soon distinguished himself in her eyes, beyond all his competitors. She danced with more than ordinary gaiety, when he happened to be her partner; neither the fairness of the evening, nor the music of the nightingale, could lengthen her walk, like his company. She affected no longer to understand the civilities of others; whilst she inclined so attentive an ear to every compliment of Horatio, that she often smiled, even when it was too delicate for her comprehension.

« Pray, Madam, » says Adams, « who was this Squire Horatio? »

Horatio, says the lady, was a young gentleman of a good family, bred to the law; and had been, some few years, called to the degree of a barrister. His face and person

were such as the generality allowed handsome: but he had a dignity in his air very rarely to be seen. His temper was of the saturnine complexion, and without the least taint of moroseness. He had wit and humour, with an inclination to satire, which he indulged rather too much.

This gentleman, who had contracted the most violent passion for Leonora, was the last person who perceived the probability of its success. The whole town had made the match for him, before he himself had drawn a confidence from her actions sufficient to mention his passion to her; for it was his opinion, (and perhaps he was there in the right), that it is highly impolitic to talk seriously of love to a woman, before you have made such a progress in her affections, that she herself expects and desires to hear it.

But whatever diffidence the fears of a lover may create, which are apt to magnify every favour conferred on a rival, and to see the little advances towards themselves, through the other end of the perspective, it was impossible that Horatio's passion should so blind his discernment, as to prevent his conceiving hopes from the behaviour of Leonora, whose fondness for him was now as visible to an indifferent person in their company, as his for her.

«I never knew any of these forward sluts  
«come to good,» says the lady who refused

Joseph's entrance into the coach, « nor  
« shall I wonder at any thing she doth in the  
« sequel. »

The lady proceeded in her story thus: It was in the midst of a gay conversation, in the walks one evening, when Horatio whispered Leonora, That he was desirous to take a turn or two with her in private; for that he had something to communicate to her of great consequence. « Are you sure it is of  
« consequence? » said she smiling. — « I  
« hope, » answered he, « you will think so  
« too, since the whole future happiness of  
« my life must depend on the event. »

Leonora, who very much suspected what was coming, would have deferred it till another time; but Horatio, who had more than half conquered the difficulty of speaking, by the first motion, was so very importunate, that she at last yielded, and leaving the rest of the company, they turned aside into an unfrequented walk.

They had retired far out of the sight of the company, both maintaining a strict silence. At last Horatio made a full stop, and taking Leonora, who stood pale and trembling, gently by the hand, he fetched a deep sigh, and then looking on her eyes, with all the tenderness imaginable, he cried out, in a faltering accent; « O Leonora, is  
« it necessary for me to declare to you on  
« what the future happiness of my life must

« be founded! Must I say, there is something  
 « belonging to you, which is a bar to my  
 « happiness, and which, unless you will part  
 « with, I must be miserable?» « What can  
 « that be?» replied Leonora. — « No won-  
 « der,» said he, « you are surprised that I  
 « should make an objection to any thing  
 « which is yours; yet sure you may guess,  
 « since it is the only one, which the riches  
 « of the world, if they were mine, should  
 « purchase of me. — Oh, it is that which  
 « you must part with, to bestow all the rest!  
 « Can Leonora, or rather will she doubt  
 « longer? — Let me then whisper it in her  
 « ears, — It is your name, Madam. It is by  
 « parting with that, by your condescension  
 « to be for ever mine, which must at once  
 « prevent me from being the most miserable,  
 « and will render me the happiest of man-  
 « kind.»

Leonora, covered with blushes, and with  
 as angry a look as she could possibly put  
 on, told him, That had she suspected what  
 his declaration would have been, he should  
 not have decoyed her from her company;  
 that he had so surprised and frightened her,  
 that she begged him to convey her back,  
 as quick as possible; which he, trembling  
 very near as much as herself, did.

« More fool he,» cried Slipslop; « it is a  
 « sign he knew very little of our *sect*. »  
 « Truly, Madam,» said Adams, « I think you

« are in the right ; I should have insisted to  
 « know a piece of her mind , when I had  
 « carried matters so far » But Mrs. Graveairs  
 desired the lady to omit all such fulsome stuff  
 in her story ; for that it made her sick.

Well then , Madam , to be as concise as  
 possible , said the lady , many weeks had not  
 passed 'after this interview' , before Horatio  
 and Leonorawere, what they call, on a good  
 footing together. All ceremonies , except the  
 last , were now over ; 'the writings were  
 now drawn , and every thing was in the  
 utmost forwardness preparative to the putting  
 Horatio in possession of all his wishes. I  
 will , if you please , repeat you a letter from  
 each of them , which I have got by heart ,  
 and will give you no small idea of their  
 passion on both sides.

Mrs Graveairs objected to hearing these  
 letters : but , being put to the vote , it was  
 carried against her by all the rest in the  
 coach , parson Adams contending for it with  
 the utmost vehemence.

### HORATIO to LEONORA.

« **H**OW vain , most adorable creature , is  
 « the pursuit of pleasure , in the absence of  
 « an object to which the mind is entirely  
 « devoted , unless it have some relation to  
 « that object ! I was last night condemned to

« the society of men of wit and learning,  
 « which, however agreeable it might have  
 « formerly been to me, now only gave me a  
 « suspicion, that they imputed my absence in  
 « conversation, to the true cause. For which  
 « reason, when your engagements forbid me  
 « the extatic happiness of seeing you, I am  
 « always desirous to be alone; since my sen-  
 « timents for Leonora are so delicate, that  
 « I cannot bear the apprehension of another's  
 « prying into those delightful endearments,  
 « with which the warm imagination of a lover  
 « will sometimes indulge him, and which I  
 « suspect my eyes then betray. To fear this  
 « discovery of our thoughts, may perhaps  
 « appear too ridiculous a nicety to minds  
 « not susceptible of all the tendernesses of  
 « this delicate passion. And surely we shall  
 « suspect there are few such, when we con-  
 « sider that it requires every human virtue to  
 « exert itself in its full extent: since the be-  
 « loved, whose happiness it ultimately re-  
 « spects, may give us charming opportunities  
 « of being brave in her defence, generous  
 « to her wants, compassionate to her afflic-  
 « tions, grateful to her kindness; and, in  
 « the same manner, of exercising every other  
 « virtue, which he who would not do to any  
 « degree, and that, with utmost rapture, can  
 « never deserve the name of a lover. It is there-  
 « fore with a view to the delicate modesty  
 « of your mind, that I cultivate it so purely in

» my own; and it is that which will sufficiently  
 « suggest to you the uneasiness I bear from  
 « those liberties, which men, to whom the  
 « world allow politeness, will sometimes give  
 « themselves on these occasions.

« Can I tell you with what eagerness I  
 « expect the arrival of that blest day, when  
 « I shall experience the falsehood of a com-  
 « mon assertion, that the greatest human  
 « happiness consists in hope? A doctrine  
 « which no person had ever stronger reason  
 « to believe than myself at present, since none  
 « ever tasted such bliss as fires my bosom  
 « with the thoughts of spending my future  
 « days with such a companion, and that  
 « every action of my life will have the glori-  
 « ous satisfaction of conducing to your hap-  
 « piness. »

### LEONORA to HORATIO\*.

« **T**HE refinement of your mind has been  
 « so evidently proved by every word and  
 « action, ever since I had first the pleasure  
 « of knowing you, that I thought it impos-  
 « sible my good opinion of Horatio could  
 « have been heightened to any additional  
 « proof of merit. This very thought was my

(a) This letter was written by a young lady on read-  
 ing the former.



« amusement when I received your last letter,  
 « which, when I opened, I confess I was  
 « surpris'd to find the delicate sentiments  
 « express'd there, so far exceeded what I  
 « thought could come even from you, (although  
 « I know all the generous principles, human  
 « nature is capable of, are centered in your  
 « breast), that words cannot paint what I  
 « feel on the reflection, that my happiness  
 « shall be the ultimate end of all your actions.

« Oh, Horatio! what a life must that be,  
 « where the meanest domestic cares are  
 « sweetened by the pleasing consideration, that  
 « the man on earth, who best deserves, and  
 « to whom you are most inclined to give  
 « your affections, is to reap either profit, or  
 « pleasure from all you do! In such a case  
 « toils must be turned into diversions, and  
 « nothing but the unavoidable inconveniencies  
 « of life, can make us remember that we  
 « are mortal.

« If the solitary turn of your thoughts,  
 « and the desire of keeping them undiscover'd,  
 « makes even the conversation of  
 « men of wit and learning tedious to you,  
 « what anxious hours must I spend, who am  
 « condemned, by custom, to the conversation  
 « of women, whose natural curiosity  
 « leads them to pry into all my thoughts,  
 « and whose envy can never suffer Horatio's  
 « heart to be possess'd by any one, without  
 « forcing them into malicious designs, against

« the person who is so happy as to possess  
 « it : but indeed, if ever envy can possibly  
 « have any excuse, or even alleviation, it  
 « is in this case, where the good is so great;  
 « and it must be equally natural to all to  
 « wish it for themselves, nor am I ashamed  
 « to own it : and to your merit, Horatio,  
 « I am obliged, that prevents my being in  
 « that most uneasy of all the situations I can  
 « figure in my imagination, of being led  
 « by inclination to love the person, whom  
 « my own judgment forces me to con-  
 « demn. »

Matters were in so great forwardness be-  
 tween this fond couple, that the day was  
 fixed for their marriage, and was now within  
 a fortnight, when the sessions chanced to  
 be held for that county, in a town about  
 twenty miles distance from that which is the  
 scene of our story. It seems it is usual for  
 the young gentlemen of the bar, to repair  
 to these sessions, not so much for the sake  
 of profit, as to shew their parts, and learn  
 the law of the justices of peace : for which  
 purpose, one of the wisest and gravest of all  
 the justices is appointed speaker, or chairman,  
 as they modestly call it, and he reads them a  
 lecture, and instructs them in the true know-  
 ledge of the law.

« You are here guilty of a little mistake, »  
 says Adams, « which, if you please, I will  
 « correct;

« correct. I have attended at one of these  
 « quarter-sessions, where I observed the coun-  
 « sel taught the justices, instead of learning  
 « any thing of them. »

It is not very material, said the lady. Hither repaired Horatio, who, as he hoped by his profession to advance his fortune, which was not at present very large, for the sake of his dear Leonora, he resolved to spare no pains, nor lose any opportunity of improving, or advancing himself in it.

The same afternoon in which he left the town, as Leonora stood at her window, a coach and six passed by; which she declared to be the compleatest, genteelest, prettiest equipage she ever saw; adding these remarkable words, « O, I am in love with that equipage! » which, though her friend Florella at that time did not greatly regard, she hath since remembered.

In the evening an assembly was held, which Leonora honoured with her company; but intended to pay her dear Horatio the compliment of refusing to dance in his absence.

O, why have not women as good resolution to maintain their vows, as they have often good inclinations in making them!

The gentleman who owned the coach and six, came to the assembly. His cloaths were as remarkably fine, as his equipage could be. He soon attracted the eyes of the company; all the smarts, all the silk waist-coats with

silver, and gold edgings, were eclipsed in an instant.

« Madam, » said Adams, « if it be not « impertinent, I should be glad to know how « this gentleman was drest. »

Sir, answered the lady, I have been told, he had on a cut-velvet coat of a cinnamon colour, lined with a pink sattin, embroidered all over with gold; his waistcoat, which was cloth of silver, was embroidered with gold likewise. I cannot be particular as to the rest of his dress; but it was all in the French fashion; for Bellarmine (that was his name) was just arrived from Paris.

This fine figure did not more entirely engage the eyes of every lady in the assembly, than Leonora did his. He had scarcely beheld her, but he stood motionless, and fixed as a statue, or at least would have done so, if good breeding had permitted him. However, he carried it so far, before he had power to correct himself, that every person in the room easily discovered where his admiration was settled. The other ladies began to single out their former partners, all perceiving who would be Bellarmine's choice; which they, however, endeavoured, by all possible means, to prevent: many of them saying to Leonora, « O Madam, I suppose we shan't « have the pleasure of seeing you dance to- « night; » and then crying out, in Bellarmine's hearing, « O, Leonora will not dance,

«I assure you; her partner is not here.» One maliciously attempted to prevent her, by sending a disagreeable fellow to ask her, that so she might be obliged, either to dance with him, or sit down: but this scheme proved abortive.

Leonora saw herself admired by the fine stranger, and envied by every woman present. Her little heart began to flutter within her, and her head was agitated with a convulsive motion. She seemed, as if she would speak to several of her acquaintance, but had nothing to say; for, as she would not mention her present triumph, so she could not disengage her thoughts one moment from the contemplation of it. She had never tasted any thing like this happiness. She had before known, what it was to torment a single woman; but to be hated and secretly cursed by a whole assembly, was a joy reserved for this blessed moment. As this vast profusion of ecstasy had confounded her understanding, so there was nothing so foolish as her behaviour. She played a thousand childish tricks, distorted her person into several shapes, and her face into several laughs, without any reason. In a word, her carriage was as absurd as her desires, which were, to affect an insensibility of the stranger's admiration, and at the same time, a triumph, from that admiration, over every woman in the room.

In this temper of mind, Bellarmine, having inquired who she was, advanced to her, and, with a low bow, begged the honour of dancing with her; which she, with as low a curtesy, immediately granted. She danced with him all night, and enjoyed, perhaps, the highest pleasure that she was capable of feeling.

At these words, Adams fetched a deep groan, which frightened the ladies, who told him, « they hoped he was not ill. » He answered, « he groaned only for the folly « of Leonora. »

Leonora retired (continued the lady) about six in the morning, but not to rest. She tumbled and tossed in her bed, with very short intervals of sleep, and those entirely filled with dreams of the equipage, and fine cloaths she had seen, and the balls, operas, and *riddotos*, which had been the subject of their conversation.

In the afternoon, Bellarmine, in the dear coach and six, came to wait on her. He was indeed charmed with her person, and was, on inquiry, so well pleased with the circumstances of her father, (for he himself, notwithstanding all his finery, was not quite so rich as Cræsus, or an Attalus.) « Attalus, » says Mr. Adams; « but pray, how came you « acquainted with these names? » The lady smiled at the question, and proceeded.—He was so pleased, I say, that he resolved to make

his addressee to her directly. He did so accordingly, and that, with so much warmth and briskness, that he quickly baffled her weak repulses, and obliged the lady to refer him to her father, who, she knew, would quickly declare in favour of a coach and six.

Thus, what Horatio had, by sighs and tears, love and tenderness, been so long obtaining, the French-English Bellarmine, with gaiety and gallantry, possessed himself of in an instant. In other words, what Modesty had employed a full year in raising, Impudence demolished in twenty-four hours.

Here, Adams groaned a second time; but the ladies, who began to smoke him, took no notice.

From the opening of the assembly, till the end of Bellarmine's visit, Leonora had scarce once thought of Horatio; but he now began, though an unwelcome guest, to enter into her mind. She wished she had seen the charming Bellarmine, and his charming equipage, before matters had gone so far. « Yet, « why (says she) should I wish to have seen « him before? or what signifies it, that I have « seen him now? Is not Horatio my lover? « almost my husband? Is he not as handsome, nay handsomer, than Bellarmine? « Ay, but Bellarmine is the genteeler, and « the finer man; yes, that he must be allowed. « Yes, yes, he is that certainly. But did « not I, no longer ago than yesterday,



« love Horatio, more than all the world?  
 « Aye, but yesterday I had not seen Bellar-  
 « mine. But doth not Horatio doat on me?  
 « and may he not in despair break his heart,  
 « if I abandon him? Well, and hath not Bel-  
 « larmine a heart to break too? Yes, but I  
 « promised Horatio first; but that was poor  
 « Bellarmine's misfortune. If I had seen him  
 « first, I should certainly have preferred him.  
 « Did not the dear creature prefer me to every  
 « woman in the assembly, when every She  
 « was laying out for him? When was it in  
 « Horatio's power, to give me such an instance  
 « of affection? Can he give me an equipage,  
 « or any of those things, which Bellarmine  
 « will make me mistress of? How vast is  
 « the difference, between being the wife of a  
 « poor counsellor, and the wife of one of  
 « Bellarmine's fortune! If I marry Horatio, I  
 « shall triumph over no more than one rival:  
 « but by marrying Bellarmine, I shall be the  
 « envy of all my acquaintance. What happi-  
 « ness! — But can I suffer Horatio to die? for  
 « he hath sworn he cannot survive my loss;  
 « But perhaps he may not die; if he should,  
 « can I prevent it? must I sacrifice myself to  
 « him? besides, Bellarmine may be as miser-  
 « able for me too. » — She was thus arguing  
 with herself, when some young ladies called  
 her to the walk, and a little relieved her  
 anxiety for the present.

The next morning, Bellarmine breakfasted

with her, in presence of her aunt, whom he sufficiently informed of his passion for Leonora. He was no sooner withdrawn, than the old lady began to advise her niece on this occasion.—«You see, child,» says she «what a fortune hath thrown in your way, and I hope you will not withstand your own pre-ferment.» Leonora sighing, begged her not to mention any such thing, when she knew her engagements to Horatio. «Engagements to a fig,» cried the aunt, «you should thank Heaven on your knees, that you have it yet in your power, to break them. Will any woman hesitate a moment, whether she shall ride in a coach, or walk on foot, all the days of her life?—But Bellarmine drives six, and Horatio not even a pair.» «Yes, but, Madam, what will the world say?» answered Leonora; «will not they condemn me?» «The world is always on the side of prudence,» cries the aunt, «and would surely condemn you, if you sacrificed your interest to any motive whatever. O, I know the world very well; and you shew your ignorance, my dear, by your objection. O my conscience! the world is wiser. I have lived longer in it than you, and I assure you, there is not any thing worth our regard besides money; nor did I ever know any one person who married from other considerations, who did not afterwards heartily repent it. Be-

« sides, if we examine the two men, can you  
 « prefer a sneaking fellow, who hath been  
 « bred at the university, to a fine gentleman  
 « just come from his travels? — All the world  
 « must allow Bellarmine to be a fine gentle-  
 « man, positively a fine gentleman, and a  
 « handsome man. » — « Perhaps, Madam, I  
 « should not doubt, if I knew but how to be  
 « handsomely off with the other. » « O, leave  
 « that to me, » says the aunt. « You know your  
 « father hath not been acquainted with the  
 « affair. Indeed, for my part, I thought it  
 « might do well enough, not dreaming of  
 « such an offer: but I'll disengage you. Leave  
 « me to give the fellow an answer. I warrant  
 « you shall have no farther trouble. »

Leonora was at length satisfied with her  
 aunt's reasoning; and Bellarmine supping  
 with her that evening, it was agreed he  
 should, the next morning, go to her father, and  
 propose the match, which she consented  
 should be consummated at his return.

The aunt retired soon after supper, and  
 the lovers being left together, Bellarmine  
 began in the following manner: « Yes, Ma-  
 « dam, this coat, I assure you, was made at  
 « Paris, and I defy the best English taylor  
 « even to imitate it. There is not one of  
 « them can cut, Madam; they can't cut. If you  
 « observe how the skirt is turned, and this  
 « sleeve, a clumsy English rascal can do no-  
 « thing like it. — Pray, how do you like my

« liveries? » Leonora answered, « she thought  
 « them very pretty. » « All French, » says  
 he, « I assure you, except the great coats. I  
 « never trust any thing more than a great  
 « coat to an Englishman. You know one  
 « must encourage our own people what one  
 « can; especially, as, before I had a place, I  
 « was in the country-interest, he, he, he!  
 « but for myself, I would see the dirty island  
 « at the bottom of the sea, rather than wear a  
 « single rag of English work about me; and  
 « I am sure, after you have made a tour to  
 « Paris, you will be of the same opinion with  
 « regard to your own clothes. You can't con-  
 « ceive what an addition a French dress would  
 « be to your beauty. I positively assure you,  
 « at the first opera I saw, since I came over,  
 « I mistook the English ladies for chamber-  
 « maids, he, he, he! »

With such sort of polite discourse, did the  
 gay Bellarmine entertain his beloved Leo-  
 nora, when the door opened on a sudden,  
 and Horatio entered the room. Here 'tis im-  
 possible to express the surprise of Leonora.

« Poor woman, » says Mrs Slipslop, « what  
 « a terrible *quandary* she must be in! » « Not  
 « at all, » says Miss Graveairs, « such sluts  
 « can never be confounded. » « She must have  
 « then more than Corinthian assurance, » said  
 Adams; « aye, more than *Lais* herself. »

A long silence, continued the lady,  
 prevailed in the whole company. If the

familiar entrance of Horatio struck the greatest astonishment into Bellarmine, the unexpected presence of Bellarmine no less surprised Horatio. At length, Leonora collecting all the spirit she was mistress of, addressed herself to the latter, and pretended to wonder at the reason of so late a visit. « I should, indeed, » answered he, « have made some apology for disturbing you at this hour, had not my finding you in company assured me I do not break in upon your repose. » Bellarmine rose from his chair, traversed the room in a minuet-step, and humm'd an opera-tune, while Horatio advancing to Leonora, asked her in a whisper, if that gentleman was not a relation of hers; to which she answered with a smile, or rather sneer, « No, he is no relation of mine yet; » adding, « she could not guess the meaning of his question. » Horatio told her softly, « it did not arise from jealousy. » « Jealousy! I assure you, it would be very strange in a common acquaintance to give himself any of those airs. » These words a little surprised Horatio; but before he had time to answer, Bellarmine danced up to the lady, and told her, « he feared he interrupted some business between her and the gentleman. » « I can have no business, » said she, « with the gentleman, nor any other, which need be any secret to you. »

« You'll pardon me, » said Horatio, « if I

« desire to know who this gentleman is,  
 « who is to be intrusted with all our secrets. »  
 « You'll know soon enough, » cries Leo-  
 nora; « but I can't guess what secrets can ever  
 « pass between us of such mighty con-  
 « sequence. » « No, Madam! » cries Horatio;  
 « I'm sure you would not have me understand  
 « you in earnest. » « 'Tis indifferent to me, »  
 says she, « how you understand me; but I  
 « think so unseasonable a visit is difficult to  
 « be understood at all. At least, when people  
 « find one engaged, though one's servants  
 « do not deny one, one may expect a well  
 « bred person should soon take the hint. »  
 « Madam, » said Horatio, « I did not ima-  
 « gine any engagement with a stranger, as  
 « it seems this gentleman is, would have made  
 « my visit impertinent, or that any such ce-  
 « remonies were to be preserved between per-  
 « sons in our situation. » « Sure you are in  
 « a dream, » said she, « or would persuade  
 « me that I am in one. I know no pretensions  
 « a common acquaintance can have, to lay  
 « aside the ceremonies of good breeding. »  
 « Sure, » said he, « I am in a dream; for it  
 « is impossible I should be really esteemed a  
 « common acquaintance by Leonora, after  
 « what has passed between us. » « Passed be-  
 « tween us! Do you intend to affront me, before  
 « this gentleman? » « D—n me, affront the  
 « lady, » says Bellarmine, cocking his hat,  
 and strutting up to Horatio, « Does any man

« dare affront this lady before me, d—n  
 « me? » « Hearkee, Sir, » says Horatio, « I  
 « would advise you to lay aside that fierce  
 « air; for I am mightily deceived, if this lady  
 « has not a violent desire to get your Wor-  
 « ship a good drubbing. » « Sir, » said Bellar-  
 mine, « I have the honour to be her protec-  
 « tor, and d—n me, if I understand your  
 « meaning. » « Sir, » answered Horatio, «  
 « she is rather your protectress: but give your-  
 « self no more airs, for you see I am pre-  
 « pared for you; » ( shaking his whip at him. )  
 « Oh! *Serviteur très humble,* » says Bellar-  
 mine, « *je vous entends parfaitement bien.* »  
 At which time, the aunt, who had heard of  
 Horatio's visit, entered the room, and soon  
 satisfied all his doubts. She convinced him  
 that he was never more awake in his life,  
 and that nothing more extraordinary had  
 happened in his three days absence, than a  
 small alteration in the affections of Leonora;  
 who now burst into tears, and wondered  
 what reason she had given him, to use her in  
 so barbarous a manner. Horatio desired Bel-  
 larmine to withdraw with him; but the ladies  
 prevented it, by laying violent hands on the  
 latter; upon which, the former took his leave  
 without any great ceremony, and departed,  
 leaving the lady with his rival, to consult for  
 his safety, which Leonora feared his indis-  
 cretion might have endangered: but the aunt  
 comforted her with assurances, that Horatio



would not venture his person against so accomplished a cavalier as Bellarmine; and that being a lawyer, he would seek revenge in his own way, and the most they had to apprehend from him, was an action.

They at length therefore agreed to permit Bellarmine to retire to his lodgings, having first settled all matters relating to the journey which he was to undertake in the morning, and their preparation for the nuptials at his return.

But, alas! as wise men have observed, the seat of valour is not the countenance; and many a grave and plain man, will, on just provocation, betake himself to that mischievous metal, cold iron, while men of fiercer brow, and sometimes with that emblem of courage, a cockade, will more prudently decline it.

Leonora was waked in the morning, from a visionary coach and six, with the dismal account, that Bellarmine was run through the body by Horatio; that he lay languishing at an inn, and the surgeons had declared the wound mortal. She immediately leap'd out of the bed, danced about the room in a frantic manner, tore her hair, and beat her breast in all the agonies of despair; in which sad condition, her aunt, who likewise arose at the news, found her. The good old lady applied her utmost art to comfort her niece. She told her, « while there was life, there

158 The ADVENTURES of

« was hope; but that if he should die, her  
 « affliction would be of no service to Bel-  
 « larmine, and would only expose herself,  
 « which might probably keep her some time  
 « without any future offer; that, as matters  
 « had happened, her wisest way would be  
 « to think no more of Bellarmine, but to  
 « endeavour to regain the affections of Ho-  
 « ratio. » « Speak not to me, » cried the  
 « disconsolate Leonora; « is it not owing to  
 « me, that poor Bellarmine has lost his life?  
 « have not these cursed charms » ( at which  
 words, she looked stedfastly in the glass )  
 « been the ruin of the most charming man  
 « of this age? Can I ever bear to contemplate  
 « my own face again? » ( with her eyes still  
 fixed on the glass ); « Am not I the mur-  
 « deress of the finest gentleman? No other  
 « woman in the town could have made any  
 « impression on him. » Never think of  
 « things past, » cries the aunt, « think of  
 « regaining the affections of Horatio. » « What  
 « reason, » said the niece, « have I to hope  
 « he would forgive me? No, I have lost him  
 « as well as the other, and it was your  
 « wicked advice, which was the occasion of  
 « all. You seduced me, contrary to my in-  
 « clinations, to abandon poor Horatio; »  
 ( at which words she burst into tears );  
 « you prevailed upon me, whether I would  
 « or no, to give up my affections for him.  
 « Had it not been for you, Bellarmine never

« would have entered into my thoughts;  
 « had not his addresses been backed by your  
 « persuasions, they never would have made  
 « any impression on me; I should have defied  
 « all the fortune and equipage in the world;  
 « but it was you, it was you who got the  
 « better of my youth and simplicity, and  
 « forced me to lose my dear Horatio for  
 « ever. »

The aunt was almost borne down with  
 this torrent of words. She however rallied  
 all the strength she could, and drawing her  
 mouth up in a pucker, begun: » I am not  
 « surpris'd, Niece, at this ingratitude. Those  
 « who advise young women for their in-  
 « terest, must always expect such a return. I  
 « am convinced my brother will thank me,  
 « for breaking off your match with Horatio  
 « at any rate. » « That may not be in your  
 « power yet, » answered Leonora; « though  
 « it is very ungrateful in you, to desire or  
 « attempt it, after the presents you have  
 « received from him. » ( For indeed, true it  
 is, that many presents, and some pretty va-  
 luable ones, had passed from Horatio to  
 the old lady; but as true it is, that Bellarmine;  
 when he breakfasted with her and her niece,  
 had complimented her with a brilliant from  
 his finger, of much greater value than all  
 she had touch'd of the other. )

The aunt's gall was on float to reply;  
 when a servant brought a letter into the

room ; which Leonora , hearing it came from Bellarmine , with great eagerness opened, and read as follows :

« Most divine Creature,

« **T**HE wound which I fear you have heard  
 « I received from my rival , is not like to  
 « be so fatal as those shot into my heart,  
 « which have been fired from your eyes,  
 « *tout-brilliant*. Those are the only cannons  
 « by which I am to fall : for my surgeon gives  
 « me hopes of being soon able to attend your  
 « *ruelle* ; till when, unless you would do me  
 « an honour, which I have scarce the *hardiesse*  
 « to think of, your absence will be the greatest  
 « anguish can be felt by,

« Madam ,

« *Avec toute le respect* in the world ;

« Your most obedient, most absolute

« *Devote*,

BELLARMINÉ. »

As soon as Leonora perceived such hopes of Bellarmine's recovery, and that the gossip Fame had, according to custom, so enlarged his danger, she presently abandoned all further thoughts of Horatio, and was soon reconciled to her aunt, who received her

again into favour, with a more Christian forgiveness, than we generally meet with. Indeed, it is possible she might be a little alarmed at the hints which her niece had given her, concerning the presents. She might apprehend such rumours, should they get abroad, might injure a reputation, which, by frequenting church twice a day, and preserving the utmost rigour, and strictness in her countenance and behaviour for many years, she had established.

Leonora's passion returned now for Bel-larmine, with greater force, after its small relaxation, than ever. She proposed to her aunt to make him a visit in his confinement, which the old lady, with great and commendable prudence, advised her to decline. «For,» says she, «should any accident intervene  
«to prevent your intended match, too forward a behaviour with this lover may injure  
«you in the eyes of others. Every woman,  
«till she is married, ought to consider of,  
«and provide against the possibility of the  
«affair's breaking off.» Leonora said, She should be indifferent to whatever might happen in such a case; for she had now so absolutely placed her affections on this dear man, (so she called him), that, if it was her misfortune to lose him, she should for ever abandon all thoughts of mankind. She therefore resolved to visit him, notwithstanding all the prudent advice of her aunt to the

contrary; and, that very afternoon, executed her resolution.

The lady was proceeding in her story, when the coach drove into the inn where the company were to dine, sorely to the dissatisfaction of Mr. Adams, whose ears were the most hungry part about him; he being, as the reader may perhaps guess, of an insatiable curiosity, and heartily desirous of hearing the end of this amour, though he professed he could scarce wish success to a lady of so inconstant a disposition.

## CHAP. V.

*A dreadful quarrel which happened at the inn where the company dined; with its bloody consequences to Mr Adams.*

AS soon as the passengers had alighted from the coach, Mr Adams, as was his custom, made directly to the kitchen, where he found Joseph sitting by the fire, and the hostess anointing his leg: for the horse which Mr Adams had borrowed of his clerk, had so violent a propensity to kneeling, that one would have thought it had been his trade, as well as his master's; nor would he always give any notice of such his intention; he was often found on his knees, when the rider least expected it. This foible, however, was

of no great inconvenience to the parson, who was accustomed to it; and, as his legs almost rouched the ground when he bestrode the beast, had but a little way to fall, and threw himself forwards on such occasion, with so much dexterity, that he never received any mischief; the horse and he frequently rolling many paces distance, and afterwards both getting up, and meeting as good friends as ever.

Poor Joseph, who had not been used to such kind of cattle, though an excellent horseman, did not so happily disengage himself; but falling with his leg under the beast, received a violent contusion, to which the good woman was, as we have said, applying a warm hand, with some camphorated spirits, just at the time when the parson entered the kitchen.

He had scarce expressed his concern for Joseph's misfortune, before the host likewise entered. He was by no means of Mr Tow-ouse's gentle disposition, and was indeed perfect master of his house, and every thing in it but his guests.

This surly fellow, who always proportioned his respect to the appearance of a traveller, from *God bless your Honour*, down to plain *Coming presently*, observing his wife on her knees to a footman, cried out, without considering his circumstances, « What a pox is the woman about? why



« don't you mind the company in the coach?  
 « Go, and ask them what they will have for  
 « dinner? » « My dear, » says she, « you  
 « know they can have nothing but what is  
 « at the fire, which will be ready presently;  
 « and really the poor young man's leg is  
 « very much bruised. » At which words, she  
 fell to chafing more violently than before.  
 The bell then happening to ring, he damn'd  
 his wife, and bid her go into the company,  
 and not stand rubbing there all day; for he  
 did not believe the young fellow's leg was  
 so bad as he pretended; and if it was, within  
 twenty miles, he would find a surgeon to  
 cut it off. Upon these words, Adams fetched  
 two strides across the room; and snapping  
 his fingers over his head, muttered aloud,  
 He would excommunicate such a wretch  
 for a farthing; for he believed the devil had  
 more humanity. These words occasioned a  
 dialogue between Adams and the host, in  
 which there were two or three sharp replies,  
 'till Joseph bade the latter know how to behave  
 himself to his betters. At which, the host,  
 (having first strictly surveyed Adams), scorn-  
 fully repeating the word betters, flew into  
 a rage, and telling Joseph he was as able  
 to walk out of his house, as he had been to  
 walk into it, offered to lay violent hands on  
 him; which Adams perceiving, dealt him so  
 sound a compliment over his face with his  
 fist, that the blood immediately gushed out of

his nose in a stream. The host being unwilling to be outdone in courtesy, especially by a person of Adam's figure, returned the favour with so much gratitude, that the parson's nostrils began to look a little redder than usual. Upon which, he again assailed his antagonist, and with another stroke laid him sprawling on the floor.

The hostess, who was a better wife than so furly a husband deserved, seeing her husband all bloody and stretched along, hastened presently to his assistance, or rather to revenge the blow, which, to all appearance, was the last he would ever receive; when, lo! a pan full of hog's blood, which unluckily stood on the dresser, presented itself first to her hands. She seized it in her fury, and, without any reflection, discharged it into the parson's face, and with so good an aim, that much the greater part first saluted his countenance, and trickled thence in so large a current down to his beard, and over his garments, that a more horrible spectacle was hardly to be seen, or even imagined. All which was perceived by Mrs. Slipslop, who entered the kitchen at that instant. This good gentlewoman, not being of a temper so extremely cool and patient as perhaps was required to ask many questions on this occasion, flew with great impetuosity at the hostess's cap, which, together with some of her hair, she plucked from her head in a moment, giving her at the

same time several hearty cuffs in the face; which, by frequent practice on the inferior servants, she had learned an excellent knack of delivering with a good grace. Poor Joseph could hardly rise from his chair; the parson was employed in wiping the blood from his eyes, which had entirely blinded him, and the landlord was but just beginning to stir, whilst Mrs Slipslop, holding down the landlady's face with her left hand, made so dexterous an use of her right, that the poor woman began to roar in a key, which alarmed all the company in the inn.

There happened to be in the inn at this time, besides the ladies who arrived in the stage-coach, the two gentlemen who were present at Mr Tow-wouse's, when Joseph was detained for his horse's meat, and whom we have before mentioned to have stopped at the ale-house with Adams. There was likewise a gentleman just returned from his travels to Italy; all whom the horrid outcry of murder presently brought into the kitchen, where the several combatants were found in the postures already described.

It was now no difficulty to put an end to the fray, the conquerors being satisfied with the vengeance they had taken, and the conquered having no appetite to renew the fight. The principal figure, and which engaged the eyes of all, was Adams, who was all over covered with blood, which the whole com-

pany concluded to be his own; and consequently imagined him no longer for this world. But the host, who had now recovered from his blow, and was risen from the ground, soon delivered them from this apprehension, by damning his wife for wasting the hog's puddings, and telling her, All would have been very well, if she had not intermeddled like a b—, as she was; adding, He was very glad the gentlewoman had paid her, though not half what she had deserved. The poor woman had indeed fared much the worst, having, besides the unmerciful cuffs received, lost a quantity of hair, which Mrs Slipslop in triumph held in her left hand.

The traveller, addressing himself to Mrs Graveairs, desired her not to be frightened; for here had been only a little boxing, which, he said, to their *disgracia*, the English were *accustomata* to: adding, It must be, however, a sight somewhat strange to him, who was just come from Italy, the Italians not being addicted to the *cuffardo*, but *bastonza*, says he. He then went up to Adams, and telling him, He looked like the ghost of Othello, bid him not shake his gory locks at him, for he could not say he did it. Adams very innocently answered, « Sir, « I am far from accusing you. » He then returned to the lady, and cried, « I find the bloody gentleman is *uno insipido del nullo senso*; « *Damnata di me*, if I have seen such a specta-

«*cuto* in my way from Viterbo.»

One of the gentlemen, having learned from the host the occasion of this bustle, and being assured by him that Adams had struck the first blow, whispered in his ear, He'd warrant he would recover. « Recover! » Master; (said the host smiling) Yes, yes, I am not afraid of dying with a blow, or a two neither; I am not such a chicken as that. » « Pugh! » said the gentleman, « I mean you will recover damages in that action, which undoubtedly you intend to bring, as soon as a writ can be returned from London; for you look like a man of too much spirit and courage, to suffer any one to beat you, without bringing your action against him. He must be a scandalous fellow indeed, who would put up a drubbing, whilst the law is open to revenge it; besides, he hath drawn blood from you, and spoiled your coat; and the jury will give damages for that too. An excellent new coat, upon my word, and now not worth a shilling! »

« I don't care, » continued he, « to intermeddle in these cases: but you have a right to my evidence; and if I am sworn, I must speak the truth. I saw you sprawling on the floor, and the blood gushing from your nostrils. You may take your own opinion; but was I in your circumstances, every drop of my blood should convey an ounce  
« of

« of gold into my pocket : remember, I don't  
 « advise you to go to law ; but if your jury  
 « were Christians , they must give swinging  
 « damages. That's all. » « Master, » cried the  
 host , scratching his head , « I have no sto-  
 « mach to law , I thank you. I have seen  
 « enough of that in the parish , where two of  
 « my neighbours have been at law about a  
 « house , till they have both lawed themselves  
 « into a goal. » At which word , he turned  
 about , and began to inquire again after his  
 hog's puddings ; nor would it probably have  
 been a sufficient excuse for his wife , that she  
 spilt them in his defence , had not some awe  
 of the company , especially of the Italian tra-  
 veller , who was a person of great dignity ,  
 withheld his rage. Whilst one of the above-  
 mentioned gentlemen was employed , as we  
 have seen him , on the behalf of the land-  
 lord , the other was no less hearty on the side  
 of Mr Adams , whom he advised to bring his  
 action immediately. He said , The assault of the  
 wife was in law the assault of the husband ;  
 for they were but one person ; and he was  
 liable to pay damages , which he said must  
 be considerable , where so bloody a disposi-  
 tion appeared. Adams answered , If it was  
 true that they were but one person , he had  
 assaulted the wife ; for he was sorry to own  
 he had struck the husband the first blow. « I  
 « am sorry you own it too, » cries the gentle-  
 man ; « for it could not possibly appear to

« the court : for here was no evidence pre-  
 « sent, but the lame man in the chair, whom  
 « I suppose to be your friend, and would  
 « consequently say nothing but what made  
 « for you. » « How, Sir, » says Adams, « do  
 « you take me for a villain, who would pro-  
 « secute revenge in cold blood, and use un-  
 « justifiable means to obtain it? If you knew  
 « me and my order, I should think you  
 « affronted both. » At the word order, the  
 gentleman stared, (for he was too bloody to  
 be of any modern order of knights), and  
 turning hastily about, said, Every man knew  
 his own business.

Matters being now composed, the com-  
 pany retired to their several apartments, the  
 two gentlemen congratulating each other on  
 the success of their good offices, in procur-  
 ing a perfect reconciliation between the  
 contending parties; and the traveller went  
 to his repast, crying, as the Italian poet  
 says,

« *Je voi very well, que zuta e pate;*

« So send up dinner, good Boniface. »

The coachman began now to grow impor-  
 tunate with his passengers, whose entrance  
 into the coach was retarded by Miss Grave-  
 airs insisting, against the remonstrance of  
 all the rest, that she would not admit a foot-



man into the coach; for poor Joseph was too lame to mount a horse. A young lady, who was, as it seems, an earl's grand-daughter, begged it with almost tears in her eyes. Mr Adams prayed, and Mrs Slipslop scolded, but all to no purpose. She said, She would not demean herself to ride with a footman: that there were waggons on the road: that if the master of the coach desired it, she would pay for two places, but would suffer no such fellow to come in. « Madam, » says Slipslop, « I am sure no one can refuse another coming into a stage-coach. » « I don't know, Madam, » says the lady, « I am not much used to stage-coaches, I seldom travel in them. » « That may be, Madam, » replied Slipslop, « very good people do, and some people's betters, for aught I know. » Miss Graveairs said, Some folks might sometimes give their tongues a liberty, to some people that were their betters, which did not become them: for her part, she was not used to converse with servants. Slipslop returned, Some people kept no servants to converse with: for her part, she thanked Heaven she lived in a family where there were a great many; and had more under her own command, than any paultry little gentlewoman in the kingdom. Miss Graveairs cried, She believed her mistress would not encourage such sauciness to her betters. « My betters, » says Slipslop, « who is my betters, pray? »

« I am your betters, » answered Miss Gréveairs, « and I'll acquaint your mistress. » — At which Mrs Slipslop laughed aloud, and told her, Her lady was one of the great gentry, and such little paultry gentlewomen, as some folks who travelled in stage-coaches, would not easily come at her.

This smart dialogue between some people and some folks, was going on at the coach-door, when a solemn person riding into the inn, and seeing Miss Gréveairs, immediately accosted her with, « Dear child, how do you? » She presently answered, « O! Papa, » « I am glad you have overtaken me. » « So am I, » answered he; « for one of our coaches is just at hand; and there being room for you in it, you shall go no farther in the stage, unless you desire it. » « How can you imagine I should desire it? » says she; so bidding Slipslop ride with her fellow, if she pleased, she took her father by the hand, who was just alighted, and walked with him into a room.

Adams instantly asked the coachman in a whisper, If he knew who the gentleman was? The coachman answered, He was now a gentleman, and kept his horse and man: « but times are altered, Master, » said he; « I remember when he was no better born than myself. » « Aye! aye! » said Adams. « My father drove the squire's coach, » answered he, « when that very man rode posti-

a lion: but he is now his steward, and a « great gentleman.» Adams then snapped his fingers, and cried, He thought she was some such trollop.

Adams made haste to acquaint Mrs Slip-slop with this good news, as he imagined it; but it found a reception different from what he expected. The prudent gentlewoman, who despised the anger of Miss Graveairs, whilst she conceived her the daughter of a gentleman of small fortune, now she heard her alliance with the upper servants of a great family in her neighbourhood, began to fear her interest with the mistress. She wished she had not carried the dispute so far, and began to think of endeavouring to reconcile herself to the young lady, before she left the inn; when luckily the scene at London, which the reader can scarce have forgotten, presented itself to her mind, and comforted her with such assurance, that she no longer apprehended any enemy with her mistress.

Every thing being now adjusted, the company entered the coach, which was just on its departure, when one lady recollected she had left her fan, a second her gloves, a third a snuff-box, and a fourth a smelling-bottle behind her; to find all which, occasioned some delay, and much swearing, to the coachman.

As soon as the coach had left the inn, the

women all together fell to the character of Miss Graveairs, whom one of them declared, She had suspected to be some low creature, from the beginning of their journey; and another affirmed, had not even the looks of a gentlewoman; a third warranted, She was no better than she should be; and turning to the lady who had related the story in the coach, said, «Did you ever hear, Madam, any thing so prudish as her remarks?» «Well, deliver me from the censoriousness of such a prude!» The fourth added, «O Madam! all these creatures are censorious: but for my part, I wonder where the wretch was bred. Indeed I must own, I have seldom conversed with these mean kind of people; so that it may appear stranger to me; but to refuse the general desire of a whole company, had something in it so astonishing, that, for my part, I own I should hardly believe it, if my own ears had not been witnesses to it.» «Yes, and so handsome a young fellow,» cries Slipshod: «the woman must have no *compulsion* in her; I believe she is more of a Turk than a Christian; I am certain, if she had any Christian woman's blood in her veins, the sight of such a young fellow must have warmed it. Indeed, there are some wretched, miserable old objects, that turn one's stomach, I should not wonder if she had refused such a one; I am as nice as herself,

« and should have cared no more than herself  
 « for the company of stinking old fellows :  
 « but, hold up thy head, Joseph, thou art  
 « none of those ; and she who hath not com-  
 « pulsion for thee, is a *Myhummetman*, and  
 « I will maintain it.» This conversation made  
 Joseph uneasy, as well as the ladies ; who,  
 perceiving the spirits which Mrs Slipslop was  
 in, ( for indeed she was not a cup too low ),  
 began to fear the consequence. One of them  
 therefore desired the lady to conclude the  
 story.— « Aye, Madam, » said Slipslop, « I  
 « beg your ladyship to give us that story you  
 « *commensated* in the morning ; » which  
 request that well-bred woman immediately  
 complied with.

## C H A P. V I.

*Conclusion of the unfortunate jilt.*

LEONORA having once broke through  
 the bounds which custom and modesty impose  
 on her sex, soon gave an unbridled indul-  
 gence to her passion. Her visits to Bellarmine  
 were more constant, as well as longer than  
 his surgeon's : in a word, she became  
 absolutely his nurse, made his water-  
 gruel, administred him his medicines, and,  
 notwithstanding the prudent advice of her aunt

to the contrary, almost entirely resided in her wounded lover's apartment.

The ladies of the town began to take her conduct under consideration; it was the chief topic of discourse at their tea-tables, and was very severely censured by the most part; especially by Lindamira, a lady whose discreet and starch carriage, together with a constant attendance at church three times a-day, had utterly defeated many malicious attacks on her own reputation: for such was the envy that Lindamira's virtue had attracted, that, notwithstanding her own strict behaviour, and strict inquiry into the lives of others, she had not been able to escape being the mark of some arrows herself, which however did her no injury; a blessing perhaps owed by her to the clergy, who were her chief male companions, and with two or three of whom she had been barbarously and unjustly calumniated.

« Not so unjustly neither, perhaps, » says Slipslop; « for the clergy are men, as well as other folks. »

The extreme delicacy of Lindamira's virtue was cruelly hurt by those freedoms which Leonora allowed herself. She said, It was an affront to her sex; that she did not imagine it consistent with any woman's honour to speak to the creature, or to be seen in her company; and that, for her part, she should always refuse to dance at an assembly with

her, for fear of contamination, by taking her by the hand.

But to return to my story : as soon as Bel-larmine was recovered, which was somewhat within a month from his receiving the wound, he set out, according to agreement, for Leonora's father's, in order to propose the match, and settle all matters with him touching settlements, and the like.

A little before his arrival, the old gentleman had received an intimation of the affair by the following letter; which I can repeat *verbatim*, and which, they say, was written neither by Leonora nor her aunt, though it was in a woman's hand. The letter was in these words :

« SIR,

« I AM sorry to acquaint you, that your  
 « daughter Leonora hath acted one of the  
 « basest, as well as most simple parts with a  
 « young gentleman to whom she had en-  
 « gaged herself, and whom she hath (pardon  
 « the word) jilted for another of inferior  
 « fortune, notwithstanding his superior figure.  
 « You may take what measures you please on  
 « this occasion. I have performed what I  
 « thought my duty; as I have, though unknown  
 « to you, a very great respect for your  
 « family. »

The old gentleman did not give himself

H v



the trouble to answer this kind epistle ; nor did he take any notice of it, after he had read it, till he saw Bellarmine. He was, to say the truth, one of those fathers who look on children as an unhappy consequence of their youthful pleasures ; which , as he would have been delighted not to have had attended them , so was he no less pleased with any opportunity to rid himself of the incumbrance. He passed , in the world's language, as an exceeding good father, being not only so rapacious as to rob and plunder all mankind to the utmost of his power, but even to deny himself the conveniences, and almost necessities of life ; which his neighbours attributed to a desire of raising immense fortunes for his children ; but in fact, it was not so. He heaped up money for its own sake only , and looked on his children as his rivals, who were to enjoy his beloved mistress , when he was incapable of possessing her , and which he would have been much more charmed with the power of carrying along with him. Nor had his children any other security of being his heirs , than that the law would constitute them such without a will , and that he had not affection enough for any one living, to take the trouble of writing one.

To this gentleman came Bellarmine, on the errand I have mentioned. His person, his equipage, his family, and his estate, seemed to the father to make him an advantageous

match for his daughter; he therefore very readily accepted his proposals: but when Bellarmine imagined the principal affair concluded, and began to open the incidental matters of fortune; the old gentleman presently changed his countenance, saying, He resolved never to marry his daughter on a Smithfield match; that whoever had love for her to take her, would, when he died, find her share of his fortune in his coffers: but he had seen such examples of undutifulness happen from the too early generosity of parents, that he had made a vow never to part with a shilling whilst he lived. He commended the saying of Solomon, He that spareth the rod, spoileth the child: but added, he might have likewise asserted, that he that spareth the purse, saveth the child. He then ran into a discourse on the extravagance of the youth of the age; whence he launched into a dissertation on horses, and came at length to commend those Bellarmine drove. That fine gentleman, who, at another season, would have been well enough pleased to dwell a little on that subject, was now very eager to resume the circumstance of fortune. He said, He had a very high value for the young lady, and would receive her with less than he would any other whatever; but that even his love to her made some regard to worldly matters necessary; for it would be a most distracting sight for him, to see her, when he had the honour to be her husband,

in less than a coach and six. The old gentleman answered, « Four will do, four will do; » and then took a turn from horses to extravagance, and from extravagance to horses, till he came round to the equipage again; whither he was no sooner arrived, than Bellarmine brought him back to the point, but all to no purpose. He made his escape from that subject in a minute; till at last the lover declared, That, in the present situation of his affairs, it was impossible for him, though he loved Leonora more than *tout le monde*, to marry her without any fortune. To which the father answered, He was sorry then his daughter must lose so valuable a match; that if he had an inclination, at present it was not in his power to advance a shilling: that he had had great losses, and been at great expences on projects, which, though he had great expectations from them, had yet produced him nothing; that he did not know what might happen hereafter, as on the birth of a son, or such accident; but he would make no promise, nor enter into any article: for he would not break his vow for all the daughters in the world.

In short, ladies, to keep you no longer in suspense, Bellarmine having tried every argument, and persuasion that he could invent, and finding them all ineffectual, at length took his leave, but not in order to return to Leonora; he proceeded directly to his own

seat, whence, after a few days stay, he returned to Paris, to the great delight of the French, and the honour of the English nation.

But as soon as he arrived at his home, he presently dispatched a messenger with the following epistle to Leonora.

« Adorable, and *Charmante*,

« I AM sorry to have the honour to tell you,  
 « I am not the *heureux* person destined for  
 « your divine arms. Your papa hath told me so,  
 « with a *politesse* not often seen on this side  
 « Paris. You may perhaps guess his manner  
 « of refusing me. — *Ah mon Dieu!* You will  
 « certainly believe me, Madam, incapable  
 « myself of delivering this *triste* message,  
 « which I intend to try the French air to cure  
 « the consequences of — *A jamais! Cœur!*  
 « *Ange!* — *Au diable!* — If your papa obliges  
 « you to marriage, I hope we shall see you  
 « at Paris; till when, the wind that blows from  
 « thence will be the warmest *dans le monde* :  
 « for it will consist almost entirely of my sighs.  
 « *Adieu, ma princesse! Ah l'amour!*

BELLARMINE. »

I shall not attempt, ladies, to describe Leonora's condition, when she received this letter. It is a picture of horror, which I

should have had as little pleasure in drawing, as you in beholding. She immediately left the place, where she was the subject of conversation and ridicule, and retired to that house I shewed you, when I began the story; where she hath ever since led a disconsolate life, and deserves perhaps pity for her misfortunes, more than our censure for a behaviour to which the artifices of her aunt very probably contributed, and to which very young women are often rendered too liable, by that blameable levity in the education of our sex.

« If I was inclined to pity her, » said a young lady in the coach, « it would be for the loss of Horatio; for I cannot discern any misfortune in her missing such a husband as Bellarmine. »

« Why, I must own, » says Slipshod, « the gentleman was a little false-hearted: but *howsoever*, it was hard to have two lovers, and get never a husband at all.— But pray, Madam, what became of *Our-asho*? »

He remains, said the lady, still unmarried; and hath applied himself so strictly to his business, that he hath raised, I hear, a very considerable fortune. And what is remarkable, they say, he never hears the name of Leonora without a sigh, nor hath ever uttered one syllable to charge her with her ill conduct towards him.

## CHAP. VII.

*A very short chapter, in which Parson Adams went a great way.*

THE lady having finished her story, received the thanks of the company : and now Joseph putting his head out of the coach, cried out, « Never believe me, if « yonder be not our parson Adams walking « along without his horse. » « On my word, « and so he is, » says Slipshod ; « and as « sure as two-pence, he hath left him behind « at the inn. » Indeed, true it is, the parson had exhibited a fresh instance of his absence of mind : for he was so pleased with having got Joseph into the coach, that he never once thought of the beast in the stable ; and finding his legs as nimble as he desired, he sallied out brandishing a crab-stick, and had kept on before the coach, mending and slackening his pace occasionally, so that he had never been much more or less than a quarter of a mile distant from it.

Mrs Slipshod desired the coachman to overtake him, which he attempted, but in vain : for the faster he drove, the faster the parson ran, often crying out, « Aye, aye, catch me if « you can : » till at length the coachman swore, He would as soon attempt to drive after a

grey-hound ; and giving the parson two or three hearty curses, he cried, « Softly, softly, « boys, » to his horses, which the civil beasts immediately obeyed.

But we will be more courteous to our reader than he was to Mrs Slipshod ; and leaving the coach, and its company to pursue their journey, we will carry our reader on after parson Adams, who stretched forwards, without looking once behind him, till having left the coach full three miles in his rear, he came to a place, where, by keeping the extremest track to the right, it was just barely possible for a human creature to miss his way. This track however did he keep, as indeed he had a wonderful capacity at these kinds of bare possibilities ; and travelling in it about three miles over the plain, he arrived at the summit of a hill, looking a great way backwards, and perceiving no coach in sight, he sat himself down on the turf, and pulling out his *Æschylus*, determined to wait here for its arrival.

He had not sat long here, before a gun going off very near, a little startled him. He looked up, and saw a gentleman within a hundred paces, taking up a partridge which he had just shot.

Adams stood up, and presented a figure to the gentleman which would have moved laughter in many ; for his cassock had just again fallen down below his great coat, that



is to say, it reached his knees; whereas the skirt of his great coat descended no lower than half way down his thighs: but the gentleman's mirth gave way to his surprise; at beholding such a personage in such a place.

Adams advancing to the gentleman, told him, He hoped he had good sport; to which the other answered, « Very little. » « I see, » « Sir, » said Adams, « you have smote one « partridge: » to which the sportsman made no reply, but proceeded to charge his piece.

Whilst the gun was charging, Adams remained in silence, which he at last broke, by observing, that it was a delightful evening. The gentleman, who had at first sight conceived a very distasteful opinion of the parson, began, on perceiving a book in his hand, and smoaking likewise the information of the cassock, to change his thoughts, and made a small advance to conversation on his side, by saying, « Sir, I suppose you are « not one of these parts?»

Adams immediately told him, No: that he was a traveller, and invited by the beauty of the evening and the place to repose a little, and amuse himself with reading. « I may as well repose myself « too, » said the sportsman; « for I have « been out this whole afternoon, and the « devil a bird have I seen till I came hither. « Perhaps then, the game is not very

« plenty hereabouts, » cries Adams. « No,  
 « Sir, » said the gentleman; « the soldiers  
 « who are quartered in the neighbourhood  
 « have killed it all. » « It is very probable, »  
 cries Adams; « for shooting is their profes-  
 « sion. » Aye, shooting the game, » answered  
 the other, « but I don't see they are so  
 « forward to shoot our enemies. I don't  
 « like that affair of Carthagena; if I had been  
 « there, I believe I should have done other-  
 « guess things, d—n me; what's a man's life,  
 « when his country demands it? A man who  
 « won't sacrifice his life for his country  
 « deserves to be hang'd, d—n. me. » Which  
 words he spoke with so violent a gesture,  
 so loud a voice, so strong an accent, and  
 so fierce a countenance, that he might have  
 frighten'd a captain of trained-bands at  
 the head of his company. But Mr Adams  
 was not greatly subject to fear; he told  
 him intrepidly, that he very much approved  
 his virtue, but disliked his swearing, and  
 begged him not to addict himself to so bad  
 a custom, without which he said he might  
 fight as bravely as Achilles did. Indeed he  
 was charmed with this discourse, he told  
 the gentleman, He would willingly have gone  
 many miles, to have met a man of his generous  
 way of thinking; that if he pleased to sit  
 down, he should be greatly delighted to  
 commune with him: for though he was a  
 clergyman, he would himself be ready, if

thereto called, to lay down his life for his country.

The gentleman sat down, and Adams by him; and then the latter began, as in the following chapter, a discourse which we have placed by itself, as it is not only the most curious in this, but perhaps in any other book.

### CHAP. VIII.

*A notable dissertation by Mr Abraham Adams; wherein that gentleman appears in a political light.*

“I DO assure you, Sir,” says he, taking the gentleman by the hand, “I am heartily glad to meet with a man of your kidney: for though I am a poor parson, I will be bold to say, I am an honest man, and would not do an ill thing to be made a bishop: nay, though it hath not fallen in my way to offer so noble a sacrifice, I have not been without opportunities of suffering for the sake of my conscience, I thank Heaven for them; for I have had relations, though I say it, who made some figure in the world, particularly a nephew, who was a shopkeeper, and an alderman of a corporation. He was a good lad, and was under my care when a boy, and I believe would do what I bade him to his dying day. Indeed, it looks like

« extreme vanity in me, to affect being a man  
« of such consequence, as to have so great  
« an interest in an alderman; but others have  
« thought so too, as manifestly appeared by  
« the rector, whose curate I formerly was,  
« sending for me on the approach of an elec-  
« tion, and telling me, If I expected to  
« continue in his cure, that I must bring my  
« nephew to vote for one Colonel Courtly,  
« a gentleman whom I had never heard tidings  
« of, till that instant. I told the rector, I had  
« no power over my nephew's vote, (God  
« forgive me for such prevarication!) that I  
« supposed he would give it according to his  
« conscience, that I would by no means endea-  
« vour to influence him to give it otherwise. He  
« told me, It was in vain to equivocate; that  
« he knew I had already spoke to him in  
« favour of Esquire Fickle my neighbour;  
« and indeed it was true I had; for it was at a  
« season when the church was in danger, and  
« when all good men expected they knew  
« not what would happen to us all. I then  
« answered boldly, If he thought I had given  
« my promise, he affronted me in proposing  
« any breach of it. Not to be too prolix, I  
« persevered, and so did my nephew, in the  
« Esquire's interest, who was chose chiefly  
« through his means; and so I lost my curacy.  
« Well, Sir, but do you think the Esquire  
« ever mentioned a word of the church? Ne  
« *verbum quidem, ut ita dicam.* Within two

years he got a place, and hath ever since  
 lived in London; where I have been in-  
 formed, (but God forbid I should believe  
 that), that he never so much as goeth to  
 a church. I remained, Sir, a considerable time  
 without any cure, and lived a full month  
 on one funeral sermon, which I preached  
 on the indisposition of a clergyman: but  
 this by the bye. At last, when Mr Fickle  
 got his place, Colonel Courtly stood again,  
 and who should make interest for him, but  
 Mr Fickle himself? That very identical Mr  
 Fickle, who had formerly told me, the  
 Colonel was an enemy both to the church  
 and state, had the confidence to solicit my  
 nephew for him; and the Colonel himself  
 offered to make me chaplain to his regi-  
 ment, which I refused in favour of Sir  
 Oliver Hearty, who told us, He would  
 sacrifice every thing to his country, and I  
 believe he would except his hunting, which  
 he stuck so close to, that in five years  
 together he went but twice up to parliament;  
 and one of those times, I have been told,  
 never was within sight of the house.  
 However, he was a worthy man, and the  
 best friend I ever had; for by his interest  
 with a bishop, he got me replaced into my  
 curacy, and gave me eight pounds out of  
 his own pocket, to buy me a gown and  
 cassock, and furnish my house. He had our  
 interest while he lived, which was not many

« years. On his death I had fresh applications  
 « made to me; for all the world knew the  
 « interest I had with my good nephew, who  
 « now was a leading man in the corporation;  
 « and Sir Thomas Booby buying the estate  
 « which had been Sir Oliver's, proposed  
 « himself a candidate. He was then a young  
 « gentleman just come from his travels; and  
 « it did me good to hear him discourse on  
 « affairs, which, for my part, I knew no-  
 « thing of. If I had been master of a thousand  
 « votes, he should have had them all. I engaged  
 « my nephew in his interest, and he was  
 « elected; and a very fine parliament-man he  
 « was. They tell me, He made speeches of an  
 « hour long, and I have been told, very fine  
 « ones: but he could never persuade the par-  
 « liament to be of his opinion. — *Non omnia*  
 « *possumus omnes*. He promised me a living,  
 « poor man, and I believe I should have had it;  
 « but an accident happened, which was, that  
 « my lady had promised it before, unknown  
 « to him. This indeed I never heard till  
 « afterwards; for my nephew, who died  
 « about a month before the incumbent, always  
 « told me I might be assured of it. Since that  
 « time, Sir Thomas, poor man, had always  
 « so much business, that he never could find  
 « leisure to see me. I believe it was partly my  
 « lady's fault too, who did not think my dress  
 « good enough for the gentry at her table.  
 « However, I must do him the justice to

I say, he never was ungrateful; and I have  
 always found his kitchen, and his cellar too,  
 open to me: many a time after service, on  
 a Sunday, ( for I preach at four churches ),  
 have I recruited my spirits with a glass of  
 his ale. Since my nephew's death, the corpo-  
 ration is in other hands, and I am not a  
 man of that consequence I was formerly. I  
 have now no longer any talents to lay out  
 in the service of my country; and to whom  
 nothing is given, of him can nothing be  
 required. However, on all proper seasons,  
 such as the approach of an election, I throw a  
 suitable dash or two into my sermons, which  
 I have the pleasure to hear is not disagreeable  
 to Sir Thomas, and the other honest gentle-  
 men my neighbours, who have all promised  
 me these five years, to procure an ordina-  
 tion for a son of mine, who is now near  
 a thirty, hath an infinite stock of learning, and  
 is, I thank Heaven, of an unexceptionable  
 life; though, as he never was at an university,  
 the bishop refuses to ordain him. Too much  
 care cannot indeed be taken in admitting  
 any to the sacred office, though I hope he  
 will never act so as to be a disgrace to any  
 order, but will serve his God and his country  
 to the utmost of his power, as I have  
 endeavoured to do before him; nay, and  
 will lay down his life, whenever called to  
 that purpose. I am sure I have educated him  
 in those principles; so that I have acquitted



« my duty, and shall have nothing to answer  
 « for on that account: but I do not distrust  
 « him, for he is a good boy; and if Provi-  
 « dence should throw it in his way to be of  
 « as much consequence in a public light as  
 « his father once was, I can answer for him,  
 « he will use his talents as honestly as I have  
 « done. »

## C H A P. I X.

*In which the gentleman descants on bravery  
 and heroic virtue, till an unlucky accident  
 puts an end to the discourse.*

THE gentleman highly commended Mr  
 Adams for his good resolutions, and told  
 him, He hoped his son would tread in his  
 steps; adding, « that if he would not die for  
 « his country, he would not be worthy to live  
 « in it. I'd make no more of shooting a man  
 « that would not die for his country, than—  
 « Sir, » said he, « I have disinherited a  
 « nephew who is in the army, because he  
 « would not exchange his commission and go  
 « to the West Indies. I believe the rascal is a  
 « coward, though he pretends to be in love  
 « forsooth. I would have all such fellows  
 « hanged, Sir; I would have them hanged. »  
 Adams answered, « That would be too severe;  
 « that men did not make themselves; and if  
 « few

« fear had too much ascendance in the mind ,  
 « the man was rather to be pitied than abhor-  
 « red; that reason and time might teach him  
 « to subdue it. » He said, « A man might be  
 « a coward at one time, and brave at another.  
 « Homer, » says he, « who so well understood  
 « and copied Nature, hath taught us this lesson ;  
 « for Paris fights, and Hector runs away: nay,  
 « we have a mightier instance of this in the  
 « history of later ages, no longer ago than  
 « the seven hundred and fifth year of Rome ,  
 « when the great Pompey, who had won so  
 « many battles, and been honoured with so  
 « many triumphs, and of whose valour several  
 « authors, especially Cicero and Paterculus,  
 « have formed such elogiums; this very Pom-  
 « pey left the battle of Pharsalia, before he  
 « had lost it, and retreated to his tent, where  
 « he sat like the most pusillanimous rascal in  
 « a fit of despair, and yielded a victory, which  
 « was to determine the empire of the world,  
 « to Cæsar. I am not much travelled in the  
 « history of modern times, that is to say, these  
 « last thousand years; but those who are, can,  
 « I make no question, furnish you with  
 « parallel instances. » He concluded therefore,  
 That had he taken any such hasty resolutions  
 against his nephew, he hoped he would con-  
 sider better, and retract them. The gentle-  
 man answered with great warmth, and talked  
 much of courage and his country, till perceiv-  
 ing it grew late, he asked Adams, What place

he intended for that night? He told him, He waited there for the stage-coach. « The stage-coach! Sir, » said the gentleman, « they are all past by long ago. You may see the last yourself almost three miles before us. » « I protest and so they are, » cries Adams, « then I must make haste and follow them. » The gentleman told him, He would hardly be able to overtake them: and that if he did not know his way, he would be in danger of losing himself on the downs; for it would be presently dark, and he might ramble about all night, and perhaps find himself farther from his journey's end in the morning than he was now. He advised him therefore to accompany him to his house, which was very little out of his way, assuring him, that he would find some country-fellow in his parish, who would conduct him for sixpence to the city where he was going. Adams accepted this proposal, and on they travelled, the gentleman renewing his discourse on courage, and the infamy of not being ready at all times to sacrifice our lives to our country. Night overtook them much about the same time as they arrived near some bushes; whence, on a sudden, they heard the most violent shrieks imaginable in a female voice. Adams offered to snatch the gun out of his companion's hand. « What are you doing? » said he. « Doing! » says Adams, « I am hastening to the assistance of the poor creature whom

« some villains are murdering. » « You are not  
 « mad enough, I hope, » says the gentleman,  
 trembling: « Do you consider this gun is only  
 « charged with shot, and that the robbers are  
 « most probably furnished with pistols loaded  
 « with bullets? This is no business of ours;  
 « let us make as much haste as possible out of  
 « the way, or we may fall into their hands  
 « ourselves. » The shrieks now increasing,  
 Adams made no answer, but snap'd his fingers,  
 and brandishing his crabstick, made directly  
 to the place whence the voice issued, and the  
 man of courage made as much expedition  
 towards his own home, whither he escaped  
 in a very short time without once looking  
 behind him: where we will leave him, to  
 contemplate his own bravery, and to censure  
 the want of it in others, and return to the  
 good Adams, who, on coming up to the  
 place whence the noise proceeded, found a  
 woman struggling with a man who had thrown  
 her on the ground, and had almost overpowered  
 her. The great abilities of Mr Adams were  
 not necessary to have formed a right judgment  
 of this affair on the first sight. He did not  
 therefore want the entreaties of the poor  
 wretch to assist her; but lifting up his crabstick,  
 he immediately levelled a blow at that part  
 of the ravisher's head, where, according to  
 the opinion of the Ancients, the brains of  
 some persons are deposited; and which he  
 had undoubtedly let forth, had not Nature

(who, as wise men have observed, equips all creatures with what is most expedient for them) taken a provident care (as she always doth with those she intends for encounters) to make this part of the head three times as thick as those of ordinary men, who are designed to exercise talents which are vulgarly called rational, and for whom as brains are necessary, she is obliged to leave some room for them in the cavity of the skull; whereas those ingredients being entirely useless to persons of the heroic calling, she hath an opportunity of thickening the bone, so as to make it less subject to any impression, or liable to be cracked or broken. And indeed, in some who are predestined to the command of armies or empires, she is supposed sometimes to make that part perfectly solid.

As a game-cock, when engaged in amorous toying with a hen, if perchance he espies another cock at hand, immediately quits his female, and opposes himself to his rival; so did the ravisher, on the information of the crabstick, immediately leap from the woman, and hasten to assail the man. He had no weapons but what Nature had furnished him with. However, he clinched his fist, and presently darted it at that part of Adams' breast where the heart is lodged. Adams staggered at the violence of the blow, when, throwing away his staff, he likewise clinched that fist, which we have before commemo-

rated, and would have discharged it full in the breast of his antagonist, had he not dexterously caught it with his left hand, at the same time darting his head, (which some modern heroes of the lower class use, like the battering-ram of the Ancients, for a weapon of offence; another reason to admire the cunningness of Nature, in composing it of those impenetrable materials), dashing his head, I say, into the stomach of Adams, he tumbled him on his back; and not having any regard to the laws of heroisin, which would have restrained him from any farther attack on his enemy till he was again on his legs, he threw himself upon him, and laying hold on the ground with his left hand, he with his right belaboured the body of Adams till he was weary, and indeed till he concluded (to use the language of fighting) « That he « had done his business; » or in the language of poetry, « that he had sent him to the shades « below; » in plain English, « that he was dead. »

But Adams, who was no chicken, and could bear a drubbing as well as any boxing champion in the universe, lay still only to watch his opportunity; and now perceiving his antagonist to pant with his labours, he exerted his utmost force at once, and with such success, that he overturned him, and became his superior; when fixing one of his knees in his breast, he cried out in an exulting voice, « It is my turn now : » and after a few

minutes constant application, he gave him so dextrous a blow just under his chin, that the fellow no longer retained any motion, and Adams began to fear he had struck him once too often; for he often asserted, He should be concerned to have the blood of even the wicked upon him.

Adams got up, and called aloud to the young woman, — « Be of good cheer, « damsel, » said he, « you are no longer « in danger of your ravisher, who, I am « terribly afraid, lyes dead at my feet; but « God forgive me what I have done in « defence of innocence. » The poor wretch, who had been some time in recovering strength enough to rise, and had afterwards; during the engagement, stood trembling, being disabled by fear even from running away, hearing her champion was victorious, came up to him, but not without apprehensions even of her deliverer; which, however, she was soon relieved from, by his courteous behaviour and gentle words. They were both standing by the body, which lay motionless on the ground, and which Adams wished to see stir much more than the woman did, when he earnestly begged her to tell him, By what misfortune she came, at such a time of night, into so lonely a place? She acquainted him, She was travelling towards London, and had accidentally met with the person from whom he had delivered



her, who told her, He was likewise on his journey to the same place, and would keep her company; an offer which, suspecting no harm, she had accepted: that he told her, they were at a small distance from an inn where she might take up her lodging that evening, and he would shew her a nearer way to it than by following the road. That if she had suspected him, (which she did not, he spoke so kindly to her), being alone on these downs in the dark, she had no human means to avoid him; that therefore she put her whole trust in Providence, and walked on, expecting every moment to arrive at the inn; when, on a sudden, being come to those bushes, he desired her to stop, and after some rude kisses, which she resisted, and some entreaties, which she rejected, he laid violent hands on her, and was attempting to execute his wicked will, when, she thanked God, he timely came up and prevented him. Adams encouraged her for saying she had put her whole trust in Providence, and told her, He doubted not but Providence had sent him to her deliverance, as a reward for that trust. He wished, indeed, he had not deprived the wicked wretch of life, but God's will be done: he said, He hoped the goodness of his intention would excuse him in the next world, and he trusted in her evidence to acquit him in this. He was then silent, and began to consider with

himself, whether it would be properer to make his escape, or to deliver himself into the hands of justice; which meditation ended, as the reader will see in the next chapter.

## C H A P. X.

*Giving an account of the strange catastrophe of the preceding adventure, which drew poor Adams into fresh calamities; and who the woman was, who owed the preservation of her chastity to his victorious arm.*

THE silence of Adams, added to the darkness of the night and loneliness of the place, struck dreadful apprehensions into the poor woman's mind: she began to fear as great an enemy in her deliverer, as he had delivered her from; and as she had not light enough to discover the age of Adams, and the benevolence visible in his countenance, she suspected he had used her as some very honest men have their country; and had rescued her out of the hands of one riser, in order to rise her himself. Such were the suspicions she drew from his silence: but indeed, they were ill-grounded. He stood over his vanquished enemy, wisely weighing in his mind the objections which might be made to either of the two methods

of proceeding mentioned in the last chapter, his judgment sometimes inclining to the one, and sometimes to the other; for both seemed to him so equally adviseable, and so equally dangerous, that probably he would have ended his days, at least two or three of them, on that very spot, before he had taken any resolution. At length he lifted up his eyes, and spied a light at a distance, to which he instantly addressed himself with « *Heus tu, Traveller, heus tu!* » He presently heard several voices, and perceived the light approaching toward him. The persons who attended the light, began some to laugh, others to sing, and others to halloo, at which the woman testified some fear, (for she had concealed her suspicions of the parson himself), but Adams said, « Be of good cheer, damsel, and repose thy trust in the same Providence which hath hitherto protected thee, and never will forsake the innocent. » These people who now approached were no other, reader, than a set of young fellows, who came to these bushes in pursuit of a diversion which they call bird-baiting. This, if thou art ignorant of it, (as, perhaps, if thou hast never travelled beyond Kensington, Islington, Hackney, or the Borough, thou mayest be), I will inform thee, is performed by holding a large clap-net before a lanthorn, and at the same time beating the bushes: for the birds, when they are disturbed from

their places of rest, or roost, immediately make to the light, and so are enticed within the net. Adams immediately told them what had happened, and desired them to hold the lanthorn to the face of the man on the ground, for he feared he had smote him fatally. But, indeed, his fears were frivolous; for the fellow, though he had been stunned by the last blow he received, had long since recovered his senses, and finding himself quit of Adams, had listened attentively to the discourse between him and the young woman; for whose departure he had patiently waited, that he might likewise withdraw himself, having no longer hopes of succeeding in his desires, which were moreover almost as well cooled by Mr. Adams, as they could have been by the young woman herself, had he obtained his utmost wish. This fellow, who had a readiness at improving any accident, thought he might now play a better part than that of a dead man; and, accordingly, the moment the candle was held to his face, he leapt up, and laying hold on Adams, cried out, «No, villain, I am not dead, though you  
«and your wicked whore might well think  
«me so, after the barbarous cruelties you  
«have exercised on me. Gentlemen, » said he, «you are luckily come to the assistance  
«of a poor traveller, who would otherwise  
«have been robbed and murdered by this

« vile man and woman, who led me hither  
 « out of my way from the high-road, and  
 « both falling on me have used me as you  
 « see.» Adams was going to answer, when  
 one of the young fellows cried, « D—n  
 « them, let's carry them both before the  
 « justice. » The poor woman began to  
 tremble, and Adams lifted up his voice,  
 but in vain. Three or four of them laid  
 hands on him, and one holding the lanthorn  
 to his face, they all agreed, He had the  
 most villainous countenance they ever beheld;  
 and an attorney's clerk, who was of the  
 company, declared, He was sure he had  
 remembered him at the bar. As to the woman,  
 her hair was dishevelled in the struggle:  
 and her nose had bled so, that they could  
 not perceive whether she was handsome or  
 ugly, but they said, Her fright plainly  
 discovered her guilt. And searching her  
 pockets, as they did those of Adams, for  
 money, which the fellow said he had lost,  
 they found in her pocket a purse with some  
 gold in it, which abundantly convinced  
 them, especially as the fellow offered to  
 swear to it. Mr Adams was found to have  
 no more than one halfpenny about him.  
 This, the clerk said, was a great presumption  
 that he was an old offender, by cunningly  
 giving all the booty to the woman. To  
 which all the rest readily assented.

This accident promising them better sport

than what they had proposed, they quitted their intention of catching birds, and unanimously resolved to proceed to the justice with the offenders. Being informed what a desperate fellow Adams was, they tied his hands behind him; and having hid their nets among the bushes, and the lanthorn being carried before them, they placed the two prisoners in their front, and then began their march: Adams not only submitting patiently to his own fate, but comforting and encouraging his companion under her sufferings.

Whilst they were on their way, the clerk informed the rest, that this adventure would prove a very beneficial one: for that they would be all intitled to their proportions of 80 l. for apprehending the robbers. This occasioned a contention concerning the parts which they had severally borne in taking them; one insisting, he ought to have the greatest share, for he had first laid his hands on Adams; another claiming a superior part, for having first held the lanthorn to the man's face on the ground, by which, he said, the whole was discovered. The clerk claimed four fifths of the reward, for having proposed to search the prisoners, and likewise the carrying them before the justice: he said indeed, In strict justice, he ought to have the whole. These claims, however, they at last consented to refer to a future decision, but

seemed all to agree that the clerk was intitled to a moiety. They then debated what money should be allotted to the young fellow who had been employed only in holding the nets. He very modestly said, That he did not apprehend any large proportion would fall to his share; but hoped they would allow him something: he desired them to consider, that they had assigned their nets to his care, which prevented him from being as forward as any in laying hold of the robbers; (for so these innocent people were called;) that if he had not occupied the nets, some other must: concluding, however, that he should be contented with the smallest share imaginable, and should think that rather their bounty than his merit. But they were all unanimous in excluding him from any part whatever, the clerk particularly swearing, If they gave him a shilling, they might do what they pleased with rest; for he would not concern himself with the affair. This contention was so hot, and so totally engaged the attention of all the parties, that a dextrous nimble thief, had he been in Mr Adam's situation, would have taken care to have given the justice no trouble that evening. Indeed it required not the art of a shepherd to escape, especially as the darkness of the night would have so much befriended him: but Adams trusted rather to his innocence than his heels, and without thinking of flight



which was easy, or resistance, (which was impossible, as there were six lusty young fellows, besides the villain himself, present) he walked with perfect resignation the way they thought proper to conduct him.

Adams frequently vented himself in ejaculations during their journey; at last poor Joseph Andrews occurring to his mind, he could not refrain sighing forth his name, which being heard by his companion in affliction, she cried, with some vehemence, « Sure I should know that voice; you cannot, « certainly, Sir, be Mr Abraham Adams? » « Indeed, damsel, » says he, « that is my « name; there is something also in your voice, « which persuades me I have heard it before. » « La, Sir, » says she, « don't you remember « poor Fanny? » « How, Fanny! » answered Adams, « indeed I very well remember you; « what can have brought you hither? » « I « have told you, Sir, » replied she, « I was « travelling towards London; but I thought « you mentioned Joseph Andrews, pray what « is become of him? » « I left him, child, « this afternoon, » said Adams, « in the stage- « coach, in his way towards our parish, « whither he is going to see you. » « To « see me! La, Sir, » answered Fanny, « « sure you jeer me; what should he be going « to see me for? » « Can you ask that? » replied Adams. « I hope, Fanny, you are « not inconstant; I assure you he deserves much

« better of you. » « La! Mr Adams, » said she, « what is Mr Joseph to me? I am sure « I never had any thing to say to him, but « as one fellow-servant might to another. » « I am sorry to hear this; » said Adams, « a virtuous passion for a young man, is « what no woman need be ashamed of. You « either do not tell me truth, or you are « false to a very worthy man. » Adams then told her what had happened at the inn, to which she listened very attentively; and a sigh often escaped from her, notwithstanding her utmost endeavours to the contrary; nor could she prevent herself from asking a thousand questions, which would have assured any one but Adams, who never saw farther into people than they desired to let him, of the truth of a passion she endeavoured to conceal. Indeed the fact was, that this poor girl having heard of Joseph's misfortune by some of the servants belonging to the coach, which we have formerly mentioned to have stopt at the inn, while the poor youth was confined to his bed, that instant abandoned the cow she was milking, and taking with her a little bundle of cloaths under her arm, and all the money she was worth in her own purse, without consulting any one, immediately set forward, in pursuit of one, whom, notwithstanding her shyness to the parson, she loved with inexpressible violence, though with the purest and most delicate passion. This shyness there-

fore, as we trust it will recommend her character to all our female readers, and not greatly surprize such of our males as are well acquainted with the younger part of the other sex, we shall not give ourselves any trouble to vindicate.

## CHAP. XI.

*What happened to them while before the justice. A chapter very full of learning.*

THEIR fellow-travellers were so engaged in the hot dispute concerning the division of the reward for apprehending these innocent people, that they attended very little to their discourse. They were now arrived at the justice's house, and had sent one of his servants in to acquaint his worship, that they had taken two robbers, and brought them before him. The justice, who was just returned from a fox-chase, and had not yet finished his dinner, ordered them to carry the prisoners into the stable, whither they were attended by all the servants in the house, and all the people in the neighbourhood, who flocked together to see them, with as much curiosity as if there was something uncommon to be seen, or that a rogue did not look like other people.

The justice now being in the height of his mirth and his cups, bethought himself of the

prisoners; and telling his company he believed they should have good sport in their examination, he ordered them into his presence. They had no sooner entered the room, than he began to revile them, saying, That robberies on the highway were now grown so frequent, that people could not sleep safely in their beds, and assured them they both should be made examples of at the ensuing assizes. After he had gone on some time in this manner, he was reminded by his clerk, that it would be proper to take the depositions of the witnesses against them; which he bid him do, and he would light his pipe in the mean time. Whilst the clerk was employed in writing down the deposition of the fellow who had pretended to be robbed, the justice employed himself in cracking jests on poor Fanny, in which he was seconded by all the company at table. One asked, Whether she was to be indicted for a highwayman? Another whispered in her ear, If she had not provided herself a great belly, he was at her service. A third said, He warranted she was a relation of Turpin. To which one of the company, a great wit, shaking his head and then his sides, answered, He believed she was nearer related to Turpis; at which there was an universal laugh. They were proceeding thus with the poor girl, when somebody smoking the cassock peeping forth from under the great coat of Adams, cried out,

« What have we here , a parson ? » « How ? »  
 « firrah , » says the justice , « do you go  
 « robbing in the dress of a clergyman ? let  
 « me tell you , your habit will not intitle  
 « you to the benefit of the clergy . » « Yes , »  
 said the witty fellow , « he will have one  
 « benefit of clergy , he will be exalted above  
 « the heads of the people ; » at which there  
 was a second laugh. And now the witty spark,  
 seeing his jokes take , began to rise in spirits ;  
 and turning to Adams , challenged him to  
 cap verses , and provoking him by giving  
 the first blow , he repeated ,

*« Molle meum levibus cord est vilebile telis .*

Upon which Adams , with a look full of  
 ineffable contempt , told him , He deserved  
 scourging for his pronunciation. The witty  
 fellow answered , « What do you deserve ,  
 « Doctor , for not being able to answer the  
 « first time ? Why I'll give you one , you  
 « blockhead — with an S .

*« Si licet , ut fulvum spectatur in ignibus haurum .*

« What , can't not with an M neither ?  
 « Thou art a pretty fellow for a parson . —  
 « Why didst not steal some of the parson's  
 « Latin , as well as his gown ? » Another at  
 the table then answered , « If he had , you  
 « would have been too hard for him : I  
 « remember you at the college a very devil .

« at this sport; I have seen you catch a fresh  
 « man: for no body that knew you would  
 « engage with you. » « I have forgot those  
 « things now, » cried the wit. « I believe  
 « I could have done pretty well formerly. —  
 « Let's see, what did I end with — an M  
 « again — aye —

*« Mars, Bacchus, Apollo, virorum.*

« I could have done it once. » — « Ah! Evil  
 « betide you, and so you can now, » said  
 the other; « nobody in this country will  
 « undertake you. » Adams could hold no  
 longer; « Friend, » said he, « I have a boy  
 « not above eight years old, who would  
 « instruct thee, that the last verse runs thus:

*« Ut sunt Divorum, Mars, Bacchus, Apollo, virorum.*

« I'll hold thee a guinea of that, » said the  
 wit, throwing the money on the table. —  
 « And I'll go your halves, » cries the other. »  
 « Done, » answered Adams; but upon  
 applying to his pocket, he was forced to  
 retract, and own he had no money about  
 him; which set them all a-laughing, and  
 confirmed the triumph of his adversary,  
 which was not moderate, any more than the  
 approbation he met with from the whole  
 company, who told Adams, He must go a  
 little longer to school, before he attempted  
 to attack that gentleman in Latin.

The clerk having finished the depositions; as well of the fellow himself, as of those who apprehended the prisoners, delivered them to the justice; who having sworn the several witnesses, without reading a syllable, ordered his clerk to make the mittimus.

Adams then said, He hoped he should not be condemned unheard. « No, no, » cries the justice, « you will be asked what you have to say for yourself, when you come on your trial: we are not trying you now; I shall only commit you to goal; if you can prove your innocence at 'Size, you will be found Ignoramus, and so no harm done. » « Is it no punishment, Sir, for an innocent man to lye several months in goal? » cries Adams: « I beg you would at least hear me before you sign the mittimus. » « What signifies all you can say? » says the justice, « is it not here in black and white against you? I must tell you, you are a very impertinent fellow, to take up so much of my time.—So make haste with his mittimus. »

The clerk now acquainted the justice, that among other suspicious things, as a penknife, &c. found in Adams's pocket, they had discovered a book written, as he apprehended, in ciphers: for no one could read a word in it. « Aye, » says the justice, « the fellow may be more than a common robber, he may be in a plot against the



«government—Produce the book.» Upon which the poor manuscript of *Æschylus*, which Adams had transcribed with his own hand, was brought forth; and the justice looking at it shook his head, and turning to the prisoner, asked the meaning of those ciphers. «Ciphers!» answered Adams, «it is a manuscript of *Æschylus*.» «Who?» «who?» said the justice. Adams repeated, «*Æschylus*.» «That is an outlandish name,» cried the clerk. «A fictitious name rather,» «I believe,» said the justice. One of the company declared it looked very much like Greek. «Greek!» said the justice, «why 'tis all writing.» «No,» says the other, «I don't positively say it is so: for it is a very long time since I have seen any Greek. «There's one,» says he, turning to the parson of the parish, who was present, «will tell us immediately.» The parson taking up the book, and putting on his spectacles and gravity together, muttered some words to himself, and then pronounced aloud—«Aye, indeed, it is a Greek manuscript, a very fine piece of antiquity. I make no doubt but it was stolen from the same clergyman from whom the rogue took the cassock.» «What did the rascal mean by his *Æschylus*?» says the justice. «Pooh!» answered the doctor, with a contemptuous grin, «do you think that fellow knows any thing of this book? *Æschylus*! ho! I see

« now what it is — A manuscript of one of  
 « the fathers. I know a nobleman who would  
 « give a great deal of money for such a piece  
 « of antiquity. — Aye, aye, question and  
 « answer. The beginning is the catechism in  
 « Greek, — Aye, — aye, = *Pollaki toi* —  
 « What's your name? » — « Aye, what's your  
 « name? » says the justice to Adams, who  
 answered, « It is Æschylus, and I will  
 « maintain it. » — « O, it is, » says the  
 justice, « make Mr Æschylus his mittimus. I  
 « will teach you to banter me with a false  
 « name. »

One of the company having looked stedfastly  
 at Adams, asked him, If he did not know  
 Lady Booby? Upon which Adams, presently  
 calling him to mind, answered in a rapture,  
 « O Squire, are you there? I believe you will  
 « inform his Worship I am innocent. » « I  
 « can indeed say, » replied the Squire, « that  
 « I am very much surprised to see you in this  
 « situation; » and then addressing himself to  
 the justice, he said, « Sir, I assure you, Mr  
 « Adams is a clergyman as he appears, and  
 « a gentleman of a very good character. I  
 « wish you would inquire a little farther into  
 « this affair; for I am convinced of his inno-  
 « cence. » « Nay, » says the justice, « if he  
 « is a gentleman, and you are sure he is innocent,  
 « I don't desire to commit him, not I; I will  
 « commit the woman by herself, and take  
 « your bail for the gentleman; look into the

« book, clerk, and see how it is to take bail;  
 « come — and make the Mittimus for the  
 « woman as fast as you can. » « Sir, » cries  
 Adams, « I assure you she is as innocent as  
 « myself. » « Perhaps, » said the Squire,  
 « there may be some mistake; pray let us  
 « hear Mr Adam's relation. » « With all my  
 « heart, » answered the justice, « and give the  
 « gentleman a glass to wet his whistle before  
 « he begins. I know how to behave myself to  
 « gentlemen as well as another. No body can  
 « say I have committed a gentleman, since I  
 « have been in the commission. » Adams then  
 began the narrative, in which, though he was  
 very prolix, he was uninterrupted, unless  
 by several hums and ha's of the justice, and  
 his desire to repeat those parts which seemed  
 to him most material. When he had finished,  
 the justice, who, on what the Squire had  
 said, believed every syllable of his story on  
 his bare affirmation, notwithstanding the  
 depositions on oath to the contrary, began  
 to let loose several rogues and rascals against  
 the witness, whom he ordered to stand forth,  
 but in vain: the said witness, long since  
 finding what turn matters were like to take,  
 had privily withdrawn, without attending  
 the issue. The justice now flew into a violent  
 passion, and was hardly prevailed with not  
 to commit the innocent fellows, who had  
 been imposed on as well as himself. He swore,  
 They had best find out the fellow who was

guilty of perjury, and bring him before him within two days, or he would bind them all over to their good behaviour. They all promised to use their best endeavours to that purpose, and were dismissed. Then the justice insisted, that Mr Adams should sit down and take a glass with him; and the parson of the parish delivered him back the manuscript without saying a word: nor would Adams, who plainly discerned his ignorance, expose it. As for Fanny, she was, at her now request, recommended to the care of a maid-servant of the house, who helped her to new dress, and clean herself.

The company in the parlour had not been long seated, before they were alarmed with a horrible uproar from without, where the persons, who had apprehended Adams and Fanny, had been regaling, according to the custom of the house, with the justice's strong beer. These were all fallen together by the ears, and were cuffing each other without any mercy. The justice himself sallied out, and with the dignity of his presence soon put an end to the fray. On his return into the parlour, he reported, That the occasion of the quarrel was no other than a dispute, to whom, if Adams had been convicted, the greater share of the reward for apprehending him had belonged. All the company laughed at this, except Adams, who, taking his pipe from his mouth, fetched a deep groan, and  
said,

said, He was concerned to see so litigious a  
 temper in men. That he remembered a story  
 something like it in one of the parishes where  
 his cure lay : « There was, » continued he,  
 « a competition between three young fellows  
 « for the place of the clerk , which I disposed  
 « of to the best of my abilities, according to  
 « merit : that is, I gave it to him who had the  
 « happiest knack at setting a psalm. The clerk  
 « was no sooner established in his place, than  
 « a contention began between the two disap-  
 « pointed candidates concerning their excel-  
 « lence, each contending on whom, had they  
 « two been the only competitors, my election  
 « would have fallen. This dispute frequently  
 « disturbed the congregation, and introduced  
 « a discord into the psalmody, till I was  
 « forced to silence them both. But, alas! the  
 « litigious spirit could not be stifled ; and  
 « being no longer able to vent itself in singing,  
 « it now broke forth in fighting. It produced  
 « many battles, ( for they were very near a  
 « match ), and I believe would have ended  
 « fatally, had not the death of the clerk given  
 « me an opportunity to promote one of them  
 « to his place, which presently put an end  
 « to the dispute, and entirely reconciled  
 « the contending parties. » Adams then pro-  
 ceeded to make some philosophical observa-  
 tions on the folly of growing warm in disputes,  
 in which neither party is interested. He then  
 applied himself vigorously to smoking, and

a long silence ensued, which was at length broke by the justice, who began to sing forth his own praises, and to value himself exceedingly on his nice discernment in the cause which had lately been before him. He was quickly interrupted by Mr Adams, between whom and his Worship a dispute now arose, whether he ought not, in strictness of law, to have committed him, the said Adams; in which the latter maintained he ought to have been committed, and the justice as vehemently held he ought not. This had most probably produced a quarrel, (for both were very violent and positive in their opinions), had not Fanny accidentally heard, that a young fellow was going from the justice's house to the very inn where the stage-coach, in which Joseph was, put up. Upon this news she immediately sent for the parson out of the parlour. Adams, when he found her resolute to go, (though she would not own the reason, but pretended she could not bear to see the faces of those who had suspected her of such a crime), was as fully determined to go with her; he accordingly took leave of the justice and company, and so ended a dispute in which the law seemed shamefully to intend to set a magistrate and a divine together by the ears.

## C H A P. XII.

*A very delightful adventure, as well to the persons concerned, as to the good-natured reader.*

ADAMS, Fanny, and the guide set out together, about one in the morning, the moon being then just risen. They had not gone above a mile, before a most violent storm of rain obliged them to take shelter in an inn, or rather alehouse; where Adams immediately procured himself a good fire, a toast and ale, and a pipe, and began to smoke with great content, utterly forgetting every thing that had happened.

Fanny sat likewise down by the fire, but was much more impatient at the storm. She presently engaged the eyes of the host, his wife, the maid of the house, and the young fellow who was their guide; they all conceived they had never seen any thing half so handsome: and indeed, reader, if thou art of an amorous hue, I advise you to skip over the next paragraph; which, to render our history perfect, we are obliged to set down, humbly hoping that we may escape the fate of Pygmalion: for if it should happen to us or to thee to be struck with this picture, we should be



perhaps in as helpless a condition as Narcissus, and might say to ourselves, *Quod petis est nusquam*. Or, if the finest features in it should set Lady—'s image before our eyes, we should be still in as bad situation, and might say to our desires, *Cælum ipsum petimus stultitia*.

Fanny was now in the nineteenth year of her age; she was tall and delicately shaped; but not one of those slender young women, who seem rather intended to hang up in the hall of an anatomist, than for any other purpose. On the contrary, she was so plump, that she seemed bursting through her tight stays, especially in the part which confined her swelling breasts. Nor did her hips want the assistance of a hoop to extend them. The exact shape of her arms denoted the form of those limbs which she concealed; and though they were a little reddened by her labour, yet if her sleeve slipped above her elbow, or her handkerchief discovered any part of her neck, a whiteness appeared which the finest Italian paint would be unable to reach. Her hair was of a chestnut brown, and Nature had been extremely lavish to her of it, which she had cut, and on Sundays used to curl down her neck in the modern fashion. Her forehead was high, her eye-brows arched, and rather full than otherwise. Her eyes black and sparkling; her nose just inclining to the Roman; her lips red and moist, and

her under-lip, according to the opinion of the ladies, too pouting. Her teeth were white, but not exactly even. The small-pox had left one only mark on her chin, which was so large, it might have been mistaken for a dimple, had not her left cheek produced one so near a neighbour to it, that the former served only for a foil to the latter. Her complexion was fair, a little injured by the sun, but overspread with such a bloom, that the finest ladies would have exchanged all their white for it : add to these a countenance, in which, though she was extremely bashful, a sensibility appeared almost incredible ; and a sweetness, whenever she smiled, beyond either imitation or description. To conclude all, she had a natural gentility, superior to the acquisition of art, and which surprised all who beheld her.

This lovely creature was sitting by the fire with Adams, when her attention was suddenly engaged by a voice from an inner room, which sung the following song.

### THE SONG.

**SAY**, *Chloe, where must the swain stray ;*

*Who is by thy beauties undone ;*

*To wash their remembrance away,*

*To what distant Lethe must run ?*

K iij

322      **THE ADVENTURES OF**

*The wretch who is sentenc'd to die ,  
May escape , and leave justice behind ;  
From his country perhaps he may fly :  
But O can he fly from his mind !*

*O rapture ! unthought of before ,  
To be thus of Chloe possess'd ;  
Nor she , nor no tyrant's hard power ,  
Her image can tear from my breast.  
But felt not Narcissus more joy ,  
With his eyes he beheld his lov'd charms ?  
Yet what he beheld , the fond boy  
More eagerly wish'd in his arms.*

*How can it thy dear image be ,  
Which fills thus my bosom with woe ?  
Can aught bear resemblance to thee ,  
Which grief and not joy can bestow ?  
This counterfeit snatch from my heart ,  
Ye pow'rs , tho' with torment I rave ,  
Tho' mortal will prove the fell smart ,  
I then shall find rest in my grave.*

*Ah ! see the dear nymph o'er the plain  
Come smiling and tripping along :  
A thousand loves dance in her train ;  
The graces around her all throng.  
To meet her soft Zephyrus flies ,  
And wafes all the sweets from the flow'rs ;  
Ah rogue ! whilst he kisses her eyes ,  
More sweets from her breath he devours,*

*My soul, whilst I gaze, is on fire ;  
 But her looks were so tender and kind ;  
 My hope almost reach'd my desire ,  
 And left lame despair far behind.  
 Transported with madness I flew ,  
 And eagerly seiz'd on my bliss ;  
 Her bosom but half she withdrew ,  
 But half she refus'd my fond kiss.*

*Advances like these made me bold ,  
 I whisper'd her , Love , — we're alone.  
 The rest let immortals unfold ,  
 No language can tell but their own.  
 Ah Chloe , expiring I cry'd ,  
 How long I thy cruelty bore ?  
 Ah ! Strephon , she blushing reply'd ;  
 You ne'er was so pressing before.*

Adams had been ruminating all this time on a passage in Æschylus, without attending in the least to the voice, though one of the most melodious that ever was heard; when casting his eyes on Fanny, he cried out, « Bless us! you look extremely pale. » Pale! « Mr Adams, » says she, « O Jesus! » and fell backwards in her chair. Adams jumped up, flung his Æschylus into the fire, and fell a roaring to the people of the house for help. He soon summoned every one into the room, and the songster among the rest: but, O reader, when this nightingale, who was no

other than Joseph Andrews himself, saw his beloved Fanny in the situation we have described her, canst thou conceive the agitations of his mind! If thou can'st not, wave that meditation to behold his happiness, when clasping her in his arms, he found life and blood returning to her cheeks; when he saw her open beloved eyes, and heard her with the softest accent whisper, « Are you Joseph Andrews? » « Art thou my Fanny? » He answered eagerly, and pulling her to his heart, he imprinted numberless kisses on her lips, without considering who were present.

If prudes are offended at the lasciviousness of this picture, they may take their eyes off from it, and survey Parson Adams dancing about the room in a rapture of joy. Some philosophers may perhaps doubt, whether he was not the happiest of the three, for the goodness of his heart enjoyed the blessings which were exulting in the breasts of both the other two, together with his own. But we shall leave such disquisitions, as too deep for us, to those who are building some favourite hypothesis, which they will refuse no metaphysical rubbish to erect and support: for our part, we give it clearly on the side of Joseph, whose happiness was not only greater than the parson's, but of longer duration: for as soon as the first tumults of Adams's rapture were over, he cast his eyes towards the fire,

where Æschylus lay expiring, and immediately rescued the poor remains, to wit, the sheep-skin covering of his dear friend, which was the work of his own hands, and had been his inseparable companion for upwards of thirty years.

Fanny had no sooner perfectly recovered herself, than she began to restrain the impetuosity of her transports; and reflecting on what she had done and suffered in the presence of so many, she was immediately covered with confusion, and pushing Joseph gently from her, she begged him to be quiet; nor would admit of either kiss or embrace any longer. Then seeing Mrs Slipslop, she curtsied, and offered to advance to her; but that high woman would not return her curtsies, but casting her eyes another way, immediately withdrew into another room, muttering as she went, she wondered who the creature was.

## CHAP. XIII.

*A dissertation concerning high people and low people, with Mrs Slipslop's departure in no very good temper of mind, and the evil plight in which she left Adams and his company.*

IT will, doubtless, seem extremely odd to many readers, that Mrs Slipslop, who

had lived several years in the same house with Fanny, should in a short separation utterly forget her. And indeed the truth is, that she remembered her very well. As we would not willingly, therefore, that any thing should appear unnatural in this our history, we will endeavour to explain the reasons of her conduct : nor do we doubt being able to satisfy the most curious reader, that Mrs Slipslop did not in the least deviate from the common road in this behaviour; and indeed, had she done otherwise, she must have descended below herself, and would have very justly been liable to censure.

Be it known then, that the human species are divided into two sorts of people, to wit, High people, and Low people. As by high people I would not be understood to mean persons literally born higher in their dimensions than the rest of the species, nor metaphorically those of exalted characters and abilities; so by low people I cannot be construed to intend the reverse. High people signify no other than people of fashion. Now, this word Fashion hath by long use lost its original meaning, from which, at present, it gives us a very different idea: for I am deceived, if by persons of fashion, we do not generally include a conception of birth and accomplishments superior to the herd of mankind; whereas, in reality, nothing more was originally meant by a person of



fashion, than a person who dress'd himself in the fashion of the times; and the word really and truly signifies no more at this day. Now, the world being thus divided into people of fashion and people of no fashion, a fierce contention arose between them; nor would those of one party, to avoid suspicion, be seen publickly to speak to those of the other, though they often held a very good correspondence in private. In this contention it is difficult to say which party succeeded: for whilst the people of fashion seized several places to their own use, such as courts, assemblies, operas, balls, &c. the people of no fashion, besides one royal place, called his Majesty's Bear-garden, have been in constant possession of all hops, fairs, revels, &c. Two places have been agreed to be divided between them, namely the church and the playhouse; where they segregate themselves from each other in a remarkable manner: for as the people of fashion exalt themselves at church over the heads of the people of no fashion, so in the playhouse they abase themselves in the same degree under their feet. This distinction I have never met with any one able to account for: it is sufficient, that so far from looking on each other as brethren in the Christian language, they seem scarce to regard each other as of the same species. This, the terms « strange persons, » « people

«one does not know, the creature, wretches, «beasts, brutes», and many other appellations, evidently demonstrate; which Mrs Slipshod having often heard her mistress use, thought she had also a right to use in her turn; and, perhaps, she was not mistaken; for these two parties, especially these bordering nearly on each other, to wit, the lowest of the high, and the highest of the low, often change their parties according to place and time; for those who are people of fashion in one place, are often people of no fashion in another. And with regard to time, it may not be unpleasant to survey the picture of dependance like a kind of ladder: as for instance, early in the morning arises the postilion, or some other boy, which great families, no more than great ships, are without, and falls to brushing the clothes, and cleaning the shoes of John the footman, who being dress'd himself, applies his hand to the same labours for Mr Secondhand, the Squire's gentleman; the gentleman, in the like manner, a little later in the day, attends the Squire; the Squire is no sooner equipped than he attends the levee of my Lord; which is no sooner over, than my Lord himself is seen at the levee of the favourite; who, after the hour of homage is at an end, appears himself to pay homage to the levee of his sovereign. Nor is there, perhaps, in this whole ladder of dependance, any one

step at a greater distance from the other than the first from the second: so that to a philosopher the question might only seem, Whether you would chuse to be a great man at six in the morning, or at two in the afternoon? And yet there are scarce two of these, who do not think the least familiarity with the persons below them a condescension, and if they were to go one step farther, a degradation.

And now, reader, I hope thou wilt pardon this long digression, which seemed to me necessary to vindicate the great character of Mrs Slipslop, from what low people, who have never seen high people, might think an absurdity: but we who know them, must have daily found very high persons know us in one place, and not in another; to-day, and not to-morrow: all which it is difficult to account for, otherwise than I have here endeavoured; and perhaps, if the gods, according to the opinion of some, made men only to laugh at them, there is no part of our behaviour which answers the end of our creation better than this.

But to return to our history, Adams, who knew no more of this than the cat which sat on the table, imagining Mrs Slipslop's memory had been much worse than it really was, followed her into the next room, crying out, « Madam « Slipslop, here is one of your old acquaint-  
« ance; do but see what a fine woman she

« is grown, since she left Lady Booby's service. »  
 « I think I reflect something of her, » answered  
 she with great dignity, « but I can't remember  
 « all the inferior servants in our family. » She  
 then proceeded to satisfy Adams's curiosity,  
 by telling him, « When she arrived at the inn,  
 « she found a chaise ready for her; that her  
 « lady being expected very shortly in the  
 « country, she was obliged to make the ut-  
 « most haste, and in *commensuration* of  
 « Joseph's lameness, she had taken him with  
 « her; and lastly, that the excessive *virulence*  
 « of the storm had driven them into the house  
 « where he found them » After which, she  
 acquainted Adams with having left his horse,  
 and express'd some wonder at his having  
 strayed so far out of his way, and at meeting  
 him, as she said, « in the company of that  
 « wench, who, she feared, was no better  
 « than she should be. »

The horse was no sooner put into Adams's  
 head, but he was immediately driven out by  
 this reflection on the character of Fanny. He  
 protested, He believed there was not a chaster  
 damsel in the universe. « I heartily wish, »  
 cried he, (snapping his fingers), « that all  
 her betters were as good. » He then proceed-  
 ed to inform her of the accident of their  
 meeting; but when he came to mention the  
 circumstance of delivering her from the  
 rape, she said, She thought him properer  
 for the army than the clergy; that

it did not become a clergyman to lay violent hands on any one; that he should have rather prayed that she might be strengthened. Adams said, He was very far from being ashamed of what he had done; she replied, « Want of « shame was not the *currycuristic* of a clergy-  
« man. » This dialogue might have probably grown warmer, had not Joseph opportunely entered the room, to ask leave of Madam Slipslop to introduce Fanny: but she positively refused to admit any such trollops; and told him, She would have been burnt before she would have suffered him to get into a chaise with her, if she had once *respected* him of having his sluts waylaid on the road for him; adding, that Mr Adams acted a very pretty part, and she did not doubt but to see him a bishop. He made the best bow he could, and cried out, « I thank you, Madam, « for that right reverend appellation, which « I shall take all honest means to deserve. » « Very honest means, » returned she with a sneer, « to bring good people together. » At these words Adams took two or three strides across the room, when the coachman came to inform Mrs Slipslop, that the storm was over, and the moon shone very bright. She then sent for Joseph, who was sitting without with his Fanny, and would have had him gone with her; but he peremptorily refused to leave Fanny behind; which threw the good woman into a violent rage. She said she would

inform her lady what doings were carrying on, and did not doubt but she would rid the parish of all such people; and concluded a long speech, full of bitterness and very hard words, with some reflections on the clergy, not decent to repeat. At last, finding Joseph unmoveable, she flung herself into the chaise, casting a look at Fanny as she went, not unlike that which Cleopatra gives Octavia in the play. To say the truth, she was most disagreeably disappointed by the presence of Fanny; she had, from her first seeing Joseph at the inn, conceived hopes of something, which might have been accomplished at an alehouse as well as a palace. Indeed, it is probable Mr Adams had rescued more than Fanny from the danger of a rape that evening.

When the chaise had carried off the enraged Slipshod; Adams, Joseph, and Fanny assembled over the fire; where they had a great deal of innocent chat, pretty enough; but as possibly it would not be very entertaining to the reader, we shall hasten to the morning; only observing that none of them went to bed that night. Adams, when he had smoaked three pipes, took a comfortable nap in a great chair, and left the lovers, whose eyes were too well employed to permit any desire of shutting them, to enjoy by themselves, during some hours, an happiness which none of my readers, who have never been in love, are capable of the least conception

of, though we had as many tongues as Homer desired, to describe it with, and which all true lovers will represent in their own minds without the least assistance from us.

Let it suffice then to say, that Fanny, after a thousand entreaties, at last gave up her whole soul to Joseph, almost fainting in his arms, with a sigh infinitely softer and sweeter too than any Arabian breeze, she whispered to his lips, which were then close to hers, « O Joseph, you have won me; I will be « yours for ever. » Joseph having thanked her on his knees, and embraced her with an eagerness which she now almost returned, leapt up in a rapture, awakened the parson, earnestly begging him, that he would that instant join their hands together. Adams rebuked him for his request, and told him, He would by no means consent to any thing contrary to the forms of the church; that he had no licence, nor indeed would he advise him to obtain one. That the church had prescribed a form, namely the publication of banns, with which all good Christians ought to comply, and to the omission of which he attributed the many miseries which beset great folks in mariages; concluding, « As many « are joined together otherwise than God's « word doth allow, are not joined together « by God, neither is their matrimony lawful. » Fanny agreed with the parson, saying to Joseph with a blush, She assured him she



would not consent to any such thing, and that she wondered at his offering it. In which resolution she was comforted and commended by Adams, and Joseph was obliged to wait patiently till after the third publication of the banns, which however he obtained the consent of Fanny, in the presence of Adams, to put in at their arrival.

The sun had been now risen some hours; when Joseph, finding his leg surprisingly recovered, proposed to walk forwards; but when they were all ready to set out, an accident a little retarded them. This was no other than the reckoning, which amounted to seven shillings; no great sum, if we consider the immense quantity of ale which Mr Adams poured in. Indeed they had no objection to the reasonableness of the bill, but many to the probability of paying it; for the fellow who had taken poor Fanny's purse, had unluckily forgot to return it. So that the account stood thus :

Mr Adams and company Dr —	0 7 0
In Mr Adams's pocket, — —	0 0 6½
In Mr Joseph's, — — —	0 0 0
In Mrs Fanny's, — — —	0 0 0
Balance, — — —	0 6 5½

They stood silent some few minutes, star-

ing at each other, when Adams whip'd out on his toes, and asked the hostess, « If there was no clergyman in that parish ? » She answered, « there was. » « Is he wealthy ? » replied he ; to which she likewise answered in the affirmative. Adams then snapping his fingers, returned overjoyed to his companions, crying out, « *Heureka, heureka* ; » which not being understood, he told them in plain English, « They need themselves no trouble, for he had a brother in the parish who would defray the reckoning ; and that he would just step to his house, and fetch the money, and return to them instantly. »

#### CHAP. XIV.

*An interview between Parson Adams and Parson Trulliber.*

PARSON Adams came to the house of parson Trulliber, whom he found stript into his waistcoat, with an apron on, and a pail in his hand, just come from serving his hogs ; for Mr Trulliber was a parson on Sundays, but all the other six, might more properly be called a farmer. He occupied a small piece of land of his own, besides which he rented a considerable deal more. His wife milked his cows, managed his dairy, and followed the

markets with butter and eggs. The hogs fell chiefly to his care, which he carefully waited on at home, and attended to fairs; on which occasion he was liable to many jokes, his own size being with much ale rendered little inferior to that of the beasts he sold. He was indeed one of the largest men you should see, and could have acted the part of Sir John Falstaff without stuffing. Add to this, that the rotundity of his belly was considerably increased by the shortness of his stature, his shadow ascending very near as far in height when he lay on his back, as when he stood on his legs. His voice was loud and hoarse, and his accent extremely broad; to complete the whole, he had a stateliness in his gait, when he walked, not unlike that of a goose, only he stalked slower.

Mr Trulliber being informed that somebody wanted to speak with him, immediately slipped off his apron, and cloathed himself in an old night-gown, being the dress in which he always saw his company at home. His wife, who informed him of Mr Adams's arrival, had made a small mistake; for she had told her husband, She believed here was a man come for some of his hogs. This supposition made Mr Trulliber hasten with the utmost expedition to attend his guest. He no sooner saw Adams, than not in the least doubting the cause of his errand to be what his wife had imagined, he told him, He

was come in very good time; that he expected a dealer that very afternoon; and added, They were all pure and fat, and upwards of twenty score a piece. Adams answered, He believed he did not know him. «Yes, yes,» cried Trulliber, «I have seen «you often at fair; why, we have dealt before «now, mun, I warrant you. Yes, yes,» cries he, «I remember thy face very well, «but won't mention a word more till you «have seen them, though I have never sold «thee a flitch of such bacon as is now in the «stye.» Upon which he laid violent hands on Adams, and dragged him into the hogs-stye which was indeed but two steps from his parlour window. They were no sooner arrived there, than he cried out, «Do but «handle them; step in, friend; art welcome «to handle them whether dost buy or no.» At which words, opening the gate, he pushed Adams into the pig-stye, insisting on it, that he should handle them, before he would talk one word with him. Adams, whose natural complaisance was beyond any artificial, was obliged to comply, before he was suffered to explain himself; and laying hold on one of their tails, the unruly beast gave such a sudden spring, that he threw poor Adams all along in the mire. Trulliber, instead of assisting him to get up, burst into a laughter, and entering the stye, said to Adams, with some contempt, Why, dost

not know to handle a hog? and was going to lay hold of one himself; but Adams, who thought he had carried his complaisance far enough, was no sooner on his legs, than he espaced out of the reach of the animals, and cried out, « *Nihil habeo cum porcis* : « I a am clergyman, Sir, and am not come to « buy hogs. » Trulliber answered, He was sorry for the mistake; but that he must blame his wife; adding, She was a fool, and always committed blunders. He then desired him to walk in, and clean himself; that he would only fasten up the sty and follow him. Adams desired leave to dry his great coat, wig and hat by the fire, which Trulliber granted. Mrs Trulliber would have brought him a bason of water to wash his face; but her husband bid her be quiet like a fool as she was, or she would commit more blunders, and then directed Adams to the pump. While Adams was thus employed, Trulliber, conceiving no great respect for the appearance of his guest, fastened the parlour-door, and now conducted him into the kitchen; telling him, He believed a cup of drink would do him no harm, and whispered his wife to draw a little of the worst ale. After a short silence, Adams said, « I fancy, Sir, you already perceive « me to be a clergyman. » « Aye, aye, » cries Trulliber grinning; « I perceive you have « some cassock; I will not venture to caale « it a whole one. » Adams answered, It was

indeed none of the best; but he had the misfortune to tear it about ten years ago in passing over a stile. Mrs Trulliber returning with the drink, told her husband, She fancied the gentleman was a traveller, and that he would be glad to eat a bit. Trulliber bid her hold her impertinent tongue; and asked her, if parsons used to travel without horses? adding, He supposed the gentleman had none, by his having no boots on. « Yes, Sir, yes, » says Adams; « I have a horse, but I left him behind me. » « I am glad to hear you have one, » says Trulliber; « for I assure you I don't love to see clergymen on foot; it is not seemly, nor suiting the dignity of the cloth. » Here Trulliber made a long oration on the dignity of the cloth (or rather gown), not much worth relating, till his wife had spread the table, and set a mess of porridge on it for his breakfast. He then said to Adams, « I don't know, friend, how you came to caale on me; however, as you are here, « if you think proper to eat a morsel, you may. » Adams accepted the invitation, and the two parsons sat down together, Mrs Trulliber waiting behind her husband's chair, as was, it seems, her custom. Trulliber eat heartily, but scarce put anything in his mouth, without finding fault with his wife's cookery. All which the poor woman bore patiently. Indeed she was so absolute an admirer of her husband's greatness and importance, of which

she had frequent hints from his own mouth; that she almost carried her adoration to an opinion of his infallibility. To say the truth, the parson had exercised her more ways than one; and the pious woman had so well been edified by her husband's sermons, that she had resolved to receive the bad things of this world together with the good. She had indeed been at first a little contentious; but he had long since got the better, partly by her love for this, partly for her fear for that, partly by her religion, partly by the respect he paid himself, and partly by that which he received from the parish. She had, in short, absolutely submitted, and now worshipped her husband as Sarah did Abraham, calling him not lord, but master. Whilst they were at table, her husband gave her a fresh example of his greatness; for as she had just delivered a cup of ale to Adams, he snatched it out of his hand, and, crying out, « *I caal'd vurst,* » swallowed down the ale. Adams denied it; it was referred to the wife, who, tho' her conscience was on the side of Adams, durst not give it against her husband. Upon which he said, « No, Sir, no, I should not have been so rude to have taken it from you, « if you *had caal'd vurst*; but I'd have you « know, I'm a better man than to suffer the « best he in the kingdom to drink before me « in my own house, when *I caale vurst.* »

As soon as their breakfast was ended,  
Adams



Adams began in the following manner : « I think, Sir, it is high time to inform you of the business of my embassy. I am a traveller, and am passing this way in company with two young people, a lad and a damsel, my parishioners, towards my own cure : we stopt at a house of hospitality in the parish, where they directed me to you, as having the cure. » — « Though I am but a curate, » says Trulliber, « I believe I am as warm as the vicar himself, or perhaps the rector of the next parish too ; I believe I could buy them both. » « Sir, » cries Adams, « I rejoice thereat. Now, Sir, my business is, that we are by various accidents stript of our money, and are not able to pay our reckoning, being seven shillings. I therefore request you to assist me with the loan of those seven shillings, and also seven shillings more, which per-adventure I shall return to you ; but if not, I am convinced you will joyfully embrace such an opportunity of laying up a treasure in a better place than any this world affords. »

Suppose a stranger, who entered the chambers of a lawyer, being imagined a client, when the lawyer was preparing his palm for the fee, should pull out a writ against him. Suppose an apothecary, at the door of a chariot containing some great doctor of eminent skill, should, instead of directions

to a patient, present him with a potion for himself. Suppose a minister should, instead of a good round sum, treat my Lord—, or Sir—, or Esq.—with a good broom-stick. Suppose a civil companion, or a led captain should, instead of virtue, and honour, and beauty, and parts, and admiration, thunder vice, and infamy, and ugliness, and folly, and contempt in his patron's ears. Suppose, when a tradesman first carries in his bill, the man of fashion should pay it; or suppose, if he did so, the tradesman should abate what he had over-charged on the supposition of waiting. In short,—suppose what you will, you never can nor will suppose any thing equal to the astonishment which seized on Trulliber, as soon as Adams had ended his speech. A while he rolled his eyes in silence, sometimes surveying Adams, then his wife, then casting them on the ground, then lifting them up to heaven. At last, he burst forth in the following accents; « Sir, I believe I « know where to lay up my little treasure « as well as another: I thank God if I am « not so warm as some, I am content; that « is a blessing greater than riches; and he « to whom that is given, need ask no more. « To be content with a little is greater than « to possess the world, which man may possess « without being so. Lay up my treasure! what « matters where a man's treasure is, whose « heart is in the scriptures? there is the treasure « of a Christian. » At these words the water

ran from Adams's eyes; and catching Trulliber by the hand in a rapture, « Brother, » says he, « Heavens bless the accident by which I « came to see you; I would have walked « many a mile to have communed with you, « and believe me, I will shortly pay you « a second visit: but my friends, I fancy, by « this time, wonder at my stay; so let me « have the money immediately. » Trulliber then put on a stern look, and cried out, « Thou dost not intend to rob me? » At which the wife, bursting into tears, fell on her knees, and roared out, « O dear Sir, « for Heaven's sake don't rob my master; « we are but poor people. » « Get up for « a fool as thou art, and go about thy business, » said Trulliber, « dost think the man will « venture his life? he is a beggar, and no « robber. » « Very true indeed, » answered Adams. « I wish, with all my heart, the « tithing-man was here, » cries Trulliber, « I would have thee punished as a vagabond « for thy impudence. Fourteen shillings « indeed! I won't give thee a farthing. I believe « thou art no more a clergyman than the « woman there, (pointing to his wife); but « if thou art, dost deserve to have thy gown « stript over thy shoulders, for running about « the country in such a manner. » « I forgive « your suspicions, » says Adams; « but suppose « I'm not a clergyman, I am nevertheless thy « brother; and thou, as a Christian, much

« more as a clergyman, art obliged to relieve  
« my distress. » « Dost preach to me ? »  
replied Trulliber, « dost pretend to instruct  
« me in my duty ? » « Ifacks, a good story, »  
cries Mrs Trulliber, « to preach to my  
« master, » « Silence, woman, » cries Trulliber ; «  
« I would have thee know, friend, » addressing  
himself to Adams, « I shall not learn my duty  
« from such as thee ; I know what charity is,  
« better than to give it to vagabonds. » « Besides,  
« if we were inclined, the poor's rate obliges  
« us to give so much charity, » cries the  
wife. » — « Pugh ! thou art a fool. Poor's rate !  
« hold thy nonsense, » answered Trulliber :  
and then, turning to Adams, he told him,  
He would give him nothing. « I am sorry, »  
answered Adams, « that you do know what  
« charity is, since you practise it no better ; I  
« must tell you, if you trust to your knowledge  
« for your justification, you will find yourself  
« deceived, tho' you should add faith to  
« it without good works. » « Fellow, » cries  
Trulliber, « dost thou speak against faith in  
« my house ? Get out of my doors, I will  
« no longer remain under the same roof with  
« a wretch who speaks wantonly of faith and  
« the Scriptures. » « Name not the Scriptures, »  
says Adams. « How, not name the Scriptures !  
« Do you disbelieve the Scriptures ? » cries  
Trulliber. « No, but you do, » answered  
Adams, « if I may reason from your practice :  
« for their commands are so explicit, and  
« their rewards and punishments so immense,

« that it is impossible a man should stedfastly  
 « believe without obeying. Now, there is  
 « no command more express, no duty more  
 « frequently enjoined, than charity. Whoever,  
 « therefore, is void of charity, I make no  
 « scruple of pronouncing that he is no  
 « Christian.» « I would not advise thee, » says  
 Trulliber, « to say that I am no Christian; I  
 « won't take it off you: for I believe I am as  
 « good a man as thyself; » ( and indeed,  
 though he was now rather too corpulent for  
 athletic exercises, he had in his youth been  
 one of the best boxers and cudgel-players in  
 the county ). His wife, seeing him clinch  
 his fist, interposed, and begged him not to  
 fight, but shew himself a true Christian, and  
 take the law of him. As nothing could provoke  
 Adams to strike but an absolute assault on  
 himself or his friend, he smiled at the angry  
 look and gestures of Trulliber; and, telling  
 him he was sorry to see such men in orders,  
 departed without further ceremony.

## C H A P. X V.

*An adventure, the consequence of a new instance  
 which Parson Adams gave of his forget-  
 fulness.*

WHEN he came back to the inn, he  
 found Joseph and Fanny sitting together.

They were so far from thinking his absence long, as he had feared they would, that they never once missed or thought of him. Indeed I have been often assured by both, that they spent these hours in a most delightful conversation: but as I never could prevail on either to relate it, so I cannot communicate it to the reader.

Adams acquainted the lovers with the ill success of his enterprize. They were all greatly confounded, none being able to propose any method of departing, till Joseph at last advised calling in the hostess, and desiring her to trust them; which Fanny said she despaired of her doing, as she was one of the fourest-faced women she had ever beheld.

But she was agreeably disappointed; for the hostess was no sooner asked the question, than she readily agreed; and with a curts'y and smile, wished them a good journey. However, lest Fanny's skill in physiognomy should be called in question, we will venture to assign one reason which might probably incline her to this confidence and good-humour. When Adams said he was going to visit his brother, he had unwittingly imposed on Joseph and Fanny; who both believed he had meant his natural brother, and not his brother in divinity; and had so informed the hostess on her inquiry after him. Now Mr Trulliber had, by his professions of piety,

by his gravity, austerity, reserve, and opinion of his great wealth, so great an authority in his parish, that they all lived in the utmost fear and apprehension of him. It was therefore no wonder that the hostess, who knew it was in his option whether she should ever sell another mug of drink, did not dare to affront his supposed brother by denying him credit.

They were now just on their departure, when Adams recollected he had left his great coat and hat at Mr Trulliber's. As he was not desirous of renewing his visit, the hostess herself, having no servant at home, offered to fetch it.

This was an unfortunate expedient: for the hostess was soon undeceived in the opinion she had entertained of Adams, whom Trulliber abused in the grossest terms, especially when he heard he had had the assurance to pretend to be his near relation.

At her return, therefore, she entirely changed her note. She said, Folks might be ashamed of travelling about, and pretending to be what they were not: that taxes were high, and, for her part, she was obliged to pay for what she had; she could not, therefore, possibly, nor would she trust any body, no not her own father: that money was never scarcer, and she wanted to make up a sum: that she expected, therefore, they should pay their reckoning before they left the house.

Adams was now greatly perplexed; but



as he knew that he could easily have borrowed such a sum in his own parish, and as he knew he would have lent it himself to any mortal in distress; so he took fresh courage, and sallied out all around the parish, but to no purpose; he returned as penniless as he went, groaning and lamenting, that it was possible, in a country professing Christianity, for a wretch to starve in the midst of his fellow-creatures who abounded.

Whilst he was gone, the hostess, who stayed as a sort of guard with Joseph and Fanny, entertained them with the goodness of Parson Trulliber. And indeed he had not only a very good character, as to other qualities, in the neighbourhood, but was reputed a man of great charity: for tho' he never gave a farthing, he had always that word in his mouth.

Adams was no sooner returned the second time, than the storm grew exceeding high, the hostess declaring, among other things, that if they offered to stir without paying her, she would soon overtake them with a warrant.

Plato and Aristotle, or somebody else hath said, THAT WHEN THE MOST EXQUISITE CUNNING FAILS, CHANCE OFTEN HITS THE MARK, AND THAT BY MEANS THE LEAST EXPECTED. Virgil expresses this very boldly:

*Turne, quod optantii divum promittere nemo*

*Auderet, volvenda dies, en! attulit ultro.*

I would quote more great men if I could; but my memory not permitting me, I will proceed to exemplify these observations by the following instance.

There chanced (for Adams had not cunning enough to contrive it) to be at that time in the alehouse a fellow who had been formerly a drummer in an Irish regiment, and now travelled the country as a pedlar. This man having attentively listened to the discourse of the hostess, at last took Adams aside, and asked him what the sum was for which they were detained. As soon as he was informed, he sighed, and said, He was sorry it was so much, for that he had no more than six shillings and sixpence in his pocket, which he would lend them with all his heart. Adams gave a caper, and cried out, It would do; for that he had sixpence himself. And thus these poor people, who could not engage the compassion of riches and piety, were at length delivered out of their distress by the charity of a poor pedlar.

I shall refer it to my reader to make what observations he pleases on this incident: it is sufficient for me to inform him, that after Adams and his companions had returned him a thousand thanks, and told him where he might call to be repaid, they all sallied out of the house without any compliments from their hostess, or indeed without paying her any; Adams declaring, He would take parti-

cular care never to call there again, and she on her side assuring them she wanted no such guests.

## CHAP. XVI.

*A very curious adventure, in which Mr Adams gave a much greater instance of the honest simplicity of his heart, than of his experience in the ways of this world.*

OUR travellers had walked about two miles from that inn, which they had more reason to have mistaken for a castle, than Don Quixote ever had any of those in which he sojourned; seeing they had met with such difficulty in escaping out of its walls, when they came to a parish, and beheld a sign of invitation hanging out. A gentleman sat smoking a pipe at the door; of whom Adams inquired the road, and received so courteous and obliging an answer, accompanied with so smiling a countenance, that the good parson, whose heart was naturally disposed to love and affection, began to ask several other questions; particularly the name of the parish, and who was the owner of a large house whose front they then had in prospect. The gentleman answered as obligingly as before; and as to the house, acquainted him

she  
no

Mr  
of  
of  
ld.

o  
re  
n  
h  
h  
n  
r  
s

it was his own. He then proceeded in the following manner; « Sir, I presume by your « habit you are a clergyman; and as you are « travelling on foot, I suppose a glass of good « beer will not be disagreeable to you, and I « can recommend my landlord's within, as some « of the best in all this country. What say « you, will you halt a little, and let us take « a pipe together? there is no better tobacco « in the kingdom. » This proposal was not displeasing to Adams, who had allayed his thirst that day with no better liquor than what Mrs Trulliber's cellar had produced; and which was indeed little superior, either in richness or flavour, to that which distilled from those grains her generous husband bestowed on his hogs. Having therefore abundantly thanked the gentleman for his kind invitation, and bid Joseph and Fanny follow him, he entered the alehouse, where a large loaf and cheese, and a pitcher of beer, which truly answered the character given of it, being set before them, the three travellers fell to eating with appetites infinitely more voracious than are to be found at the most exquisite eating-houses in the parish of St James's.

The gentleman expressed great delight in the hearty and chearful behaviour of Adams; and particularly in the familiarity with which he conversed with Joseph and Fanny, whom he often called his children, a term he ex-

plained to mean no more than his parishioners; saying, He looked on all those whom God had entrusted to his care, to stand to him in that relation. The gentleman, shaking him by the hand, highly applauded those sentiments. « They are indeed, » says he, « the true principles of a Christian divine, and « I heartily wish they were universal: but on « the contrary, I am sorry to say the parson « of our parish, instead of esteeming his poor « parishioners as a part of his family, seems « rather to consider them as not of the same « species with himself. He seldom speaks « to any, unless some few of the richest of « us; nay, indeed he will not move his hat « to the others. I often laugh, when I behold « him on Sundays strutting alone the church- « yard like a turkey-cock, through rows of « his parishioners, who bow to him with « as much submission, and are as unregarded « as a set of servile courtiers by the proudest « prince in Christendom. But if such temporal pride is ridiculous, surely the spiritual is odious and detestable; if such a puffed-up empty human bladder, strutting in princely robes, just moves one's derision, surely in the habit of a priest it must raise our scorn »

« Doubtless, » answered Adams, « your opinion is right; but I hope such examples are rare. The clergy whom I have the honour to know, maintain a different

«behaviour; and you will allow me, Sir,  
 «that the readiness which too many of the  
 «laity show to condemn the order, may be  
 «one reason of their avoiding too much  
 «humility. » «Very true indeed, » says  
 the gentleman; «I find, Sir, you are a man  
 «of excellent sense, and am happy in this  
 «opportunity of knowing you: perhaps our  
 «accidental meeting may not be disadvanta-  
 «geous to you neither. At present I shall  
 «only say to you, that the incumbent of  
 «this living is old and infirm; and that it is  
 «in my gift. Doctor, give me your hand; and  
 «assure yourself of it at his decease. » Adams  
 told him, He was never more confounded  
 in his life, than at his utter incapacity to  
 make any return to such noble and unmer-  
 ited generosity. «A mere trifle, Sir, » cries  
 the gentleman, «scarce worth your accept-  
 »ance; a little more than three hundred a-  
 «year. I wish it was double the value for  
 «your sake. » Adams bowed, and cried  
 from the emotions of his gratitude; when  
 the other asked him, If he was married,  
 or had any children, besides those in the  
 spiritual sense he had mentioned. «Sir, »  
 replied the parson, «I have a wife and six  
 «at your service. » «That is unlucky, » says  
 the gentleman; «for I would otherwise have  
 «taken you into my own house as my cha-  
 «plain; however, I have another in the  
 «parish (for the parsonage-house is not

«good enough) which I will furnish for  
 «you. Pray does your wife understand a  
 «dairy?» «I can't profess she does,» says  
 Adams. «I am sorry for it,» quoth the  
 gentleman; «I would have given you half  
 «a dozen cows, and very good grounds  
 «to have maintained them.» «Sir,» said  
 Adams, in an ecstasy, «you are too liberal;  
 «indeed you are.» «Not at all,» cries the  
 gentleman, «I esteem riches only as they  
 «give me an opportunity of doing good,  
 «and I never saw one whom I had a greater  
 «inclination to serve.» At which words  
 he shook him heartily by the hand, and  
 told him, he had sufficient room in his house  
 to entertain him and his friends. Adams  
 begged he might give him no such trouble;  
 that they could be very well accommodated  
 in the house where they were; forgetting  
 they had not a sixpenny piece among them.  
 The gentleman would not be denied; and  
 informing himself how they were travel-  
 ling, he said it was too long a journey to  
 take on foot, and begged that they would  
 favour him, by suffering him to lend them  
 a servant and horses; adding withal, that  
 if they would do him the pleasure of their  
 company only two days, he would furnish  
 them with his coach and six. Adams turning  
 to Joseph, said, «How lucky is this gentle-  
 «man's goodness to you, who, I am afraid,  
 «would be scarce able to hold out on your



« lame leg : » and then addressing the person  
 who made him these liberal promises, after  
 much bowing, he cried out, « Blessed be  
 « the hour which first introduced me to a  
 « man of your charity ! you are indeed a  
 « Christian of the true primitive kind, and  
 « an honour to the country wherein you  
 « live. I would willingly have taken a pil-  
 « grimage to the Holy Land to have beheld  
 « you : for the advantages which we draw  
 « from your goodness give me little pleasure  
 « in comparilon of what I enjoy for your own  
 « sake, when I consider the treasures you  
 « are by these means laying up for yourself  
 « in a country that passeth not away. We will  
 « therefore, most generous Sir, accept your  
 « goodness, as well the entertainment you  
 « have so kindly offered us at your house this  
 « evening, as the accommodation of your  
 « horses to morrow morning. » He then  
 began to search for his hat, as did Joseph  
 for his, and both they and Fanny were in  
 order of departure, when the gentleman  
 stopping short, and seeming to meditate  
 by himself for the space of about a minute,  
 exclaimed thus : « Sure never any thing was  
 « so unlucky ; I had forgot that my house-  
 « keeper was gone abroad, and hath locked  
 « up all my rooms : indeed I would break  
 « them open for you, but shall not be able  
 « to furnish you with a bed ; for she has  
 « likewise put away all my linen. I am glad

« it entered into my head before I had given  
« you the trouble of walking there : besides,  
« I believe you will find better accommoda-  
« tions here than you expected. Landlord,  
« you can provide good beds for these people,  
« can't you? » « Yes, and please your Wor-  
« ship, » cries the host, « and such as no lord  
« or justice of the peace in the kingdom  
« need be ashamed to lie in. » « I am hearti-  
« ly sorry, » says the gentleman, « for this  
« disappointment. I am resolved I will never  
« suffer her to carry away the keys again. »  
« Pray, Sir, let it not make you uneasy, »  
cries Adams, « we shall do very well here;  
« and the loan of your horses is a favour we  
« shall be incapable of making any return  
« to. » « Aye, » said the Squire, « the horses  
« shall attend you here, at what hour in the  
« morning you please. » And now after many  
civilities too tedious to enumerate, many  
squeezes by the hand, with most affectionate  
looks and smiles at each other, and after  
appointing the horses at seven the next morn-  
ing, the gentleman took his leave of them,  
and departed to his own house. Adams and  
his companions returned to the table, where  
the parson smoked another pipe, and then  
they all retired to rest.

Mr Adams rose very early, and called  
Joseph out of his bed, between whom a  
very fierce dispute ensued, whether Fanny  
should ride behind Joseph, or behind the

gentleman's servant; Joseph insisting on it, that he was perfectly recovered, and was as capable of taking care of Fanny, as any other person could be. But Adams would not agree to it, and declared he would not trust her behind him; for that he was weaker than he imagined himself to be.

This dispute continued a long time, and had begun to be very hot, when a servant arrived from their good friend to acquaint them, that he was unfortunately prevented from lending them any horses; for that his groom had, unknown to him, put his whole stable under a course of physick.

This advice presently struck the two disputants dumb. Adams cried out, « Was ever  
« any thing so unlucky as this poor gentle-  
« man? I protest I am more sorry on his ac-  
« count than my own. You see, Joseph,  
« how this good-natured man is treated by  
« his servants; one locks up his linen, an-  
« other physicks his horses; and I suppose, by  
« his being in this house last night, the  
« butler had locked up his cellar. Bless us! how  
« good nature is used in this world! I protest I  
« am more concerned on his account than my  
« own». « So am not I, » cries Joseph; « not that  
« I am much troubled about walking on foot;  
« all my concern is, how we shall get out of the  
« house, unless God sends another pedlar to  
« redeem us. But certainly this gentleman has  
« such an affection for you, that he would lend

« a larger sum than we owe here, which  
 « is not above four or five shillings. » « Very  
 « true, child, » answered Adams; « I will write  
 « a letter to him, and will even venture to  
 « solicit him for three half-crowns; there  
 « will be no harm in having two or three  
 « shillings in our pockets; as we have full  
 « forty miles to travel, we may possibly have  
 « occasion for them. »

Fanny being now risen, Joseph paid her a visit, and left Adams to write his letter, which having finished, he dispatched a boy with it to the gentleman, and then seated himself by the door, lighted his pipe, and betook himself to meditation.

The boy staying longer than seemed to be necessary, Joseph, who with Fanny was now returned to the parson, expressed some apprehensions, that the gentleman's steward had locked up his purse too. To which Adams answered, « It might very possibly be; and  
 « he should wonder at no liberties, which  
 « the devil might put into the head of a  
 « wicked servant to take with so worthy a  
 « master: » but added, « that as the sum was  
 « so small, so noble a gentleman would be  
 « easily able to procure it in the parish,  
 « though he had it not in his own pocket.  
 « Indeed, » says he, « if it was four or five  
 « guineas, or any such large quantity of  
 « money, it might be a different matter. »

They were now sat down to breakfast over

some toast and ale, when the boy returned, and informed them, that the gentleman was not at home. «Very well!» cries Adams; «but why, child, did you not stay till his return? Go back again, my good boy, and wait for his coming home: he cannot be gone far, as his horses are all sick; and, besides, he had no intention to go abroad, for he invited us to spend this day and to-morrow at his house. Therefore go back, child, and tarry till his return home.» The messenger departed, and was back again with great expedition, bringing an account, that the gentleman was gone a long journey, and would not be at home again this month. At these words Adams seemed greatly confounded, saying, «This must be a sudden accident, as the sickness or death of a relation, or some such unforeseen misfortune;» and then turning to Joseph, cried, «I wish you had reminded me to have borrowed this money last night.» Joseph smiling, answered, He was very much deceived if the gentleman would not have found some excuse to avoid lending of it. «I own,» says he, «I was never much pleased with his professing so much kindness for you at first sight; for I have heard the gentlemen of our cloth in London tell many such stories of their masters. But when the boy brought the message back of his not being at home, I presently knew what would follow; for whenever a

« man of fashion doth not care to fulfil his  
« promises, the custom is, to order the servants  
« that he will never be at home to the person  
« so promised. In London they call it denying  
« him. I have myself denied Sir Thomas Booby  
« above an hundred times; and when the  
« man hath danced attendance for about a  
« month, or sometimes longer, he is acquainted  
« in the end, that the gentleman is gone  
« out of town, and could do nothing in the  
« business. » « Good Lord! » says Adams;  
« what wickedness is there in the Christian  
« world! I profess almost equal to what I have  
« read of the Heathens. But surely, Joseph,  
« your suspicions of this gentleman must be  
« unjust; for, what a silly fellow must he  
« be, who would do the devil's work for  
« nothing? and canst thou tell me any interest  
« he could possibly propose to himself by  
« deceiving us in his professions? » « It is not  
« for me, » answered Joseph, « to give reasons  
« for what men do, to a gentleman of your  
« learning. » « You say right, » quoth Adams;  
« knowledge of men is only to be learn'd  
« from books; Plato and Seneca for that;  
« and those are authors, I am afraid, child,  
« you never read. » « Not I, Sir, truly, »  
answered Joseph; « all I know is, it is a  
« maxim among the gentlemen of our cloth,  
« that those masters who promise the most  
« perform the least, and I have often heard  
« them say, they have found the largest vails

« in those families where they were not  
 « promised any. But, Sir, instead of considering  
 « any farther these matters, it would be our  
 « wisest way to contrive some method of  
 « getting out of this house: for the generous  
 « gentleman, instead of doing us any service,  
 « hath left us the whole reckoning to pay. »  
 Adams was going to answer, when their host  
 came in, and, with a kind of jeering smile, said,  
 « Well, masters! the Squire hath not sent  
 « his horses for you yet. Laud help me! how  
 « easily some folks make promises! » « How! »  
 says Adams, « have you ever known him to  
 « do any thing of the kind before? » « Aye,  
 « marry have I, » answered the host: « it  
 « is no business of mine, you know, Sir,  
 « to say any thing to a gentleman to his  
 « face; but now he is not here, I will assure  
 « you, he hath not his fellow within the three  
 « next market-towns. I own I could not help  
 « laughing when I heard him offer you the  
 « living; for thereby hangs a good jest. I  
 « thought he would have offered you my  
 « house next; for the one is no more his  
 « to dispose of than the other. » At these  
 words, Adams blessing himself declared,  
 « he had never read of such a monster: but  
 « what vexes me most, » says he, « is, that  
 « he hath decoyed us into running up a long  
 « debt with you, which we are not able to  
 « pay; for we have no money about us; and,  
 « what is worse, live at such a distance, that



« if you should trust us, I am afraid you would  
 « lose your money, for want of our finding  
 « any conveniency of sending it. » Trust you,  
 « master! » says the host, « that I will with  
 « all my heart; I honour the clergy too much  
 « to deny trusting one of them for such a  
 « trifle; besides, I like your fear of never  
 « paying me. I have lost many a debt in my  
 « life time, but was promised to be paid them  
 « all in a very short time. I will score this  
 « reckoning for the novelty of it. It is the  
 « first, I do assure you, of its kind. But what  
 « say you, master, shall we have t'other pot  
 « before we part? It will waste but a little  
 « chalk more; and if you never pay me a  
 « shilling, the loss will not ruin me. » Adams  
 liked the invitation very well, especially as  
 it was delivered with so hearty an accent.—  
 He shook his host by the hand, and, thanking  
 him, said, He would tarry another pot,  
 rather for the pleasure of such worthy company  
 than for the liquor; adding, He was glad  
 to find some Christians left in the kingdom;  
 for that he almost began to suspect he was  
 sojourning in a country inhabited only by  
 Jews and Turks.

The kind host produced the liquor, and  
 Joseph with Fanny retired into the garden;  
 where, while they solaced themselves with  
 amorous discourse, Adams sat down with  
 his host; and both filling their glasses, and  
 lighting their pipes, they began that dialogue

which the reader will find in the next chapter.

## CHAP. XVII.

*A dialogue between Mr Abraham Adams and his host, which, by the disagreement in their opinions, seemed to threaten an unlucky catastrophe, had it not been timely prevented by the return of the lovers.*

«SIR,» said the host, «I assure you, you  
«are not the first to whom our Squire hath  
«promised more than he hath performed.  
«He is so famous for this practice, that his  
«word will not be taken for much by those  
«who know him. I remember a young fellow  
«whom he promised his parents to make an  
«exciseman. The poor people, who could  
«ill afford it, bred their son to writing  
«and accounts, and other learning, to qualify  
«him for the place; and the boy held up  
«his head above his condition with these  
«hopes; nor would he go to plough, nor  
«to any other kind of work, and went  
«constantly dressed as fine as could be, with  
«two clean Holland shirts a-week, and this  
«for several years; till at last he followed  
«the Squire up to London, thinking there  
«to mind him of his promises; but he could  
«never get sight of him. So that being out  
«of money and business, he fell into evil

« company and wicked courses; and in the  
« end came to a sentence of transportation,  
« the news of which broke the mother's heart.  
« I will tell you another true story of him:  
« There was a neighbour of mine, a farmer,  
« who had two sons whom he bred up to  
« the business. Pretty lads they were: nothing  
« would serve the Squire but that the youngest  
« must be made a parson. Upon which he  
« persuaded the father to send him to school,  
« promising that he would afterwards maintain  
« him at the university, and when he was  
« of a proper age, give him a living. But  
« after the lad had been seven years at school,  
« and his father brought him to the Squire,  
« with a letter from his master, that he was  
« fit for the university, the Squire, instead  
« of minding his promise, or sending him  
« thither at his expence, only told his father,  
« that the young man was a fine scholar;  
« and it was pity he could not afford to keep  
« him at Oxford for four or five years more,  
« by which time, if he could get him a  
« curacy, he might have him ordained. The  
« farmer said, He was not a man sufficient  
« to do any such thing. Why then, answered  
« the Squire, I am very sorry you have given  
« him so much learning; for if he cannot get  
« his living by that, it will rather spoil him  
« for any thing else; and your other son, who  
« can hardly write his name, will do more  
« at ploughing and sowing, and is in a  
« better

« better condition than he : and indeed so it  
 « proved ; for the poor lad , not finding  
 « friends to maintain him in his learning , as  
 « he expected , and being unwilling to work ,  
 « fell to drinking , though he was a very sober  
 « lad before ; and in a short time , partly with  
 « grief , and partly with good liquor , fell into  
 « a consumption and died. Nay , I can tell  
 « you more still. There was another , a  
 « young woman , and the handsomest in all  
 « this neighbourhood , whom he inticed up  
 « to London , promising to make her a  
 « gentlewoman to one of your women of  
 « quality : but instead of keeping his word ,  
 « we have since heard , after having a child  
 « by her himself , she became a common  
 « whore ; then kept a coffee-house in Covent-  
 « garden , and a little after died of the French  
 « distemper in a goal. I could tell you many  
 « more stories : but how do you imagine he  
 « served me myself ? You must know , Sir ,  
 « I was bred a sea-faring man , and have  
 « been many voyages , 'till at last I came to  
 « be master of a ship myself , and was in  
 « a fair way of making a fortune , when I  
 « was attacked by one of those cursed *Guarda-*  
 « *costas* , who took our ships before the  
 « beginning of the war ; and after a fight ,  
 « wherein I lost the greatest part of my crew ,  
 « my rigging being all demolished , and two  
 « shots received between wind and water ,  
 « I was forced to strike. The villains carried

« company and wicked courses; and in the  
« end came to a sentence of transportation,  
« the news of which broke the mother's heart.  
« I will tell you another true story of him:  
« There was a neighbour of mine, a farmer,  
« who had two sons whom he bred up to  
« the business. Pretty lads they were: nothing  
« would serve the Squire but that the youngest  
« must be made a parson. Upon which he  
« persuaded the father to send him to school,  
« promising that he would afterwards maintain  
« him at the university, and when he was  
« of a proper age, give him a living. But  
« after the lad had been seven years at school,  
« and his father brought him to the Squire,  
« with a letter from his master, that he was  
« fit for the university, the Squire, instead  
« of minding his promise, or sending him  
« thither at his expence, only told his father,  
« that the young man was a fine scholar;  
« and it was pity he could not afford to keep  
« him at Oxford for four or five years more,  
« by which time, if he could get him a  
« curacy, he might have him ordained. The  
« farmer said, He was not a man sufficient  
« to do any such thing. Why then, answered  
« the Squire, I am very sorry you have given  
« him so much learning; for if he cannot get  
« his living by that, it will rather spoil him  
« for any thing else; and your other son, who  
« can hardly write his name, will do more  
« at ploughing and sowing, and is in a  
« better

« better condition than he : and indeed so it  
 « proved ; for the poor lad , not finding  
 « friends to maintain him in his learning , as  
 « he expected , and being unwilling to work ,  
 « fell to drinking , though he was a very sober  
 « lad before ; and in a short time , partly with  
 « grief , and partly with good liquor , fell into  
 « a consumption and died. Nay , I can tell  
 « you more still. There was another , a  
 « young woman , and the handsomest in all  
 « this neighbourhood , whom he inticed up  
 « to London , promising to make her a  
 « gentlewoman to one of your women of  
 « quality : but instead of keeping his word ,  
 « we have since heard , after having a child  
 « by her himself , she became a common  
 « whore ; then kept a coffee-house in Covent-  
 « garden , and a little after died of the French  
 « distemper in a goal. I could tell you many  
 « more stories : but how do you imagine he  
 « served me myself ? You must know , Sir ,  
 « I was bred a sea-faring man , and have  
 « been many voyages , 'till at last I came to  
 « be master of a ship myself , and was in  
 « a fair way of making a fortune , when I  
 « was attacked by one of those cursed *Guarda-*  
 « *costas* , who took our ships before the  
 « beginning of the war ; and after a fight ,  
 « wherein I lost the greatest part of my crew ,  
 « my rigging being all demolished , and two  
 « shots received between wind and water ,  
 « I was forced to strike. The villains carried

« off my ship, a brigantine of an hundred  
 « and fifty tons, a pretty creature she was;  
 « and put me, a man and a boy, into a  
 « little bad pink, in which, with much ado,  
 « we at last made Falmouth; tho' I believe  
 « the Spaniards did not imagine she could  
 « possibly live a day at sea. Upon my return  
 « hither, where my wife, who was of this  
 « country, then lived, the Squire told me,  
 « he was so pleased with the defence I had  
 « made against the enemy, that he did not  
 « fear getting me promoted to a lieutenancy  
 « of a man of war, if I would accept of it;  
 « which I thankfully assured him I would.  
 « Well, Sir, two or three years past, during  
 « which I had many repeated promises, not  
 « only from the Squire, but (as he told me)  
 « from the Lords of the Admiralty. He never  
 « returned from London, but I was assured  
 « I might be satisfied now, for I was certain  
 « of the first vacancy; and what surprises  
 « me still, when I reflect on it, these assurances  
 « were given me with no less confidence,  
 « after so many disappointments, than at first.  
 « At last, Sir, growing weary, and somewhat  
 « suspicious after so much delay, I wrote to  
 « a friend in London, who I knew had some  
 « acquaintance at the best house in the admi-  
 « ralty, and desired him to back the Squire's  
 « interest: for indeed I feared he had solicited  
 « the affair with more coldness than he pretend-  
 « ed.—And what answer do you think my



« friend sent me?— Truly, Sir, he acquainted  
 « me, that the Squire had never mentioned  
 « my name at the admiralty in his life, and  
 « unless I had much faithfuller interest, advised  
 « me to give over my pretensions, which I  
 « immediately did, and, with the concurrence  
 « of my wife, resolved to set up an alehouse,  
 « where you are heartily welcome: and so my  
 « service to you; and may the Squire, and  
 « all such sneaking rascals, go to the devil  
 « together. » « Oh fy! » says Adams; « Oh  
 « fy! he is indeed a wicked man; but God  
 « will, I hope, turn his heart to repentance.  
 « Nay, if he could but once see the meanness  
 « of this detestable vice, would he but once  
 « reflect that he is one of the most scandalous  
 « as well as pernicious lyars, sure he must  
 « despise himself to so intolerable a degree,  
 « that it would be impossible for him to  
 « continue a moment in such a course. And,  
 « to confess the truth, notwithstanding the  
 « baseness of this character, which he hath  
 « too well deserved, he hath in his countenance  
 « sufficient symptoms of that *bona indoles*, that  
 « sweetness of disposition which furnishes out  
 « a good Christian. » « Ah! master, master, »  
 « says the host; « if you had travelled as far  
 « as I have, and conversed with the many  
 « nations where I have traded, you would  
 « not give any credit to a man's countenance.  
 « Symptoms in his countenance, quotha!  
 « I would look there, perhaps, to see whether

« a man has had the small-pox, but for nothing  
 « else. » He spoke this with so little regard  
 to the parson's observation, that it a good  
 deal nettled him; and, taking the pipe  
 hastily from his mouth, he thus answered:  
 « Master of mine, perhaps I have travelled  
 « a great deal farther than you, without the  
 « assistance of a ship. Do you imagine sailing  
 « by different cities or countries is travelling?  
 « No :

« *Calum non animum mutant qui trans mare currunt.*

« I can go farther in an afternoon than you  
 « in a twelvemonth. What, I suppose you  
 « have seen the pillars of Hercules, and  
 « perhaps the walls of Carthage. Nay, you  
 « may have heard Scylla, and seen Charybdis:  
 « you may have entered the closet where  
 « Archimedes was found at the taking Syracuse.  
 « I suppose you have sailed among the Cy-  
 « clades, and passed the famous straits which  
 « take their name from the unfortunate Helle,  
 « whose fate is sweetly described by Apollonius  
 « Rhodius. You have passed the very spot,  
 « I conceive, where Dædalus fell into that sea,  
 « his waxen wings being melted by the sun.  
 « You have traversed the Euxine sea, I make  
 « no doubt; nay, you may have been on the  
 « banks of the Caspian, and called at Colchis,  
 « to see if there is ever another golden fleece. »  
 — « Not I, truly, master, » answered the  
 host, « I never touched at any of these

« places. » « But I have been at all these, »  
 replied Adams. « Then I suppose, » cries  
 the host, « you have been at the East-Indies ;  
 « for there are no such, I will be sworn,  
 « either in the West or the Levant. » « Pray  
 « where's the Levant ? » quoth Adams, « that  
 « should be in the East-Indies by right. » —  
 « Oho ! you are a pretty traveller, » cries the  
 host, « and not know the Levant. My service  
 « to you, master ; you must not talk of these  
 « things with me ! you must not tip us the  
 « traveller ; it won't go here. » « Since thou  
 « art so dull to misunderstand me still, »  
 quoth Adams, « I will inform thee ; the  
 « travelling I mean is in books, the only  
 « way of travelling by which any knowledge  
 « is to be acquired. From them I learn what  
 « I asserted just now, that Nature generally  
 « imprints such a portraiture of the mind in  
 « the countenance, that a skilful physiognomist  
 « will rarely be deceived. I presume you have  
 « never read the story of Socrates to this  
 « purpose, and therefore I will tell it you.  
 « A certain physiognomist asserted of Socrates,  
 « that he plainly discovered by his features  
 « that he was a rogue in his nature. A character  
 « so contrary to the tenour of all this great  
 « man's actions, and the generally received  
 « opinion concerning him, incensed the boys  
 « of Athens so, that they threw stones at the  
 « physiognomist, and would have demolished  
 « him for his ignorance, had not Socrates

« himself prevented them, by confessing the  
 « truth of his observations, and acknowledg-  
 « ing, that though he corrected his disposition  
 « by philosophy, he was indeed naturally  
 « as inclined to vice as had been predicated  
 « of him. Now, pray, resolve me, — How  
 « should a man know this story, if he had not  
 « read it? » « Well, master, » said the host, «  
 « and what signifies it whether a man knows  
 « it or no? He who goes abroad, as I have  
 « done, will always have opportunities enough  
 « of knowing the world, without troubling  
 « his head with Socrates, or any such fel-  
 « lows. » — « Friend, » cries Adams, « if a  
 « man should sail round the world, and  
 « anchor in every harbour of it, without  
 « learning, he would return home as ignorant  
 « as he went out. » « Lord help you, » an-  
 « swered the host, « there was my boatswain,  
 « poor fellow! he could scarce either write  
 « or read, and yet he would navigate a ship  
 « with any master of a man of war; and a  
 « very pretty knowledge of trade he had too. »  
 « Trade, » answered Adams, « as Aristotle  
 « proves, in his first chapter of politics, is  
 « below a philosopher, and unnatural as it  
 « is managed now. » The host looked stedfastly  
 at Adams, and after a minute's silence, asked  
 him, if he was one of the writers of the  
 Gazetteers? « for I have heard, » says he, «  
 « they are writ by parsons. » « Gazetteers? »  
 answered Adams, « What is that? » « It is a

« dirty news-paper, » replied the host, «  
 « which hath been given away all over the  
 « nation for these many years, to abuse trade  
 « and honest men, which I would not suffer  
 « to lie on my table, though it hath been of-  
 « fered me for nothing. » « Not I, truly, »  
 said Adams, « I never write any thing but  
 « sermons, and I assure you I am no enemy  
 « to trade, while it is consistent with honesty;  
 « nay, I have always looked on the tradesman  
 « as a very valuable member of society, and  
 « perhaps inferior to none but the man of  
 « learning. » « No, I believe he is not, nor to  
 « him neither, » answered the host. « Of what  
 « use would learning be in a country without  
 « trade? What would all you parsons do to  
 « clothe your backs and feed your bellies? who  
 « fetches you your silks and your linens, and  
 « your wines, and all the other necessaries of  
 « life? I speak chiefly with regard to the  
 « sailors. » « You should say, the extrava-  
 « gancies of life, » replied the parson; « but admit  
 « they were the necessaries, there is something  
 « more necessary than life itself, which is  
 « provided by learning, I mean the learning  
 « of the clergy. Who clothes you with piety,  
 « meekness, humility, charity, patience, and  
 « all the other Christian virtues? who feeds  
 « your souls with the milk of brotherly love,  
 « and diets them with all the dainty food of  
 « holiness, which at once cleanses them of  
 « all impure carnal affections, and fattens

« them with the truly rich Spirit of grace?—  
 « Who doth this? » « Aye, who indeed! »  
 cries the host; « for I do not remember to  
 « have seen any such clothing, or such feeding.  
 « And so in the mean time, master, my  
 « service to you. » Adams was going to answer  
 with some severity, when Joseph and Fanny  
 returned, and pressed his departure so eagerly,  
 that he would not refuse them; and so, grasping  
 his crabstick, he took leave of his host,  
 ( neither of them being so well pleased with  
 each other as they had been at their first  
 sitting down together ), and with Joseph and  
 Fanny, who both expressed much impatience,  
 departed, and now all together renewed their  
 journey.

*End of the First Volume.*

# CONTENTS

OF THE

## FIRST VOLUME.

### BOOK I.

#### CHAP. I.

*OF writing lives in general, and particularly of Pamela; with a word by the bye of Colley Cibber, and others.* Page 1

#### CHAP. II.

*Of Mr. Joseph Andrews, his birth, parentage, education, and great endowments, with a word or two concerning ancestors.* 4

#### CHAP. III.

*Of Mr. Abraham Adams the curate, Mrs Slipslop the chambermaid, and others.* 8

#### CHAP. IV.

*What happened after their journey to London.*

14

VOL. I.

N



## CONTENTS.

### CHAP. V.

*The death of Sir Thomas Booby, with the affectionate and mournful behaviour of his widow, and the great purity of Joseph Andrews.*

17

### CHAP. VI.

*How Joseph Andrews writ a letter to his sister Pamela.*

21

### CHAP. VII.

*Sayings of wise men. A dialogue between the Lady and her maid; and a panegyric, or rather satire, on the passion of love, in the sublime style.*

27

### CHAP. VIII.

*In which, after some very fine writing, the history goes on, and relates the interview between the Lady and Joseph; where the latter hath set an example which we despair of seeing followed by his sex, in this vicious age.*

32

### CHAP. IX.

*What passed between the Lady and Mrs. Slipslop, in which we prophesy there are*

## CONTENTS.

*Some strokes which every one will not truly comprehend at the first reading.* 49

### CHAP. X.

*Joseph writes another letter: His transactions with Mr. Peter Pounce, &c. with his departure from Lady Booby.* 46

### CHAP. XI.

*Of several new matters not expected.* 49

### CHAP. XII.

*Containing many surprising adventures, which Joseph Andrews met with on the road, scarce credible to those who have never travelled in a stage-coach.* 54

### CHAP. XIII.

*What happened to Joseph during his sickness at the inn, with the curious discourse between him and M. Barnabas, the parson of the parish.* 65

### CHAP. XIV.

*Being very full of adventures, which succeeded each other at the inn.* 71

## CONTENTS.

### CHAP. XV.

*Shewing how Mrs Tow-wouse was a little mollified ; and how officious Mr Barnabas and the surgeon were to prosecute the thief : with a dissertation accounting for their zeal , and that of many other persons not mentioned in this history.* 79

### CHAP. XVI.

*The escape of the thief. M. Adams's disappointment. The arrival of two very extraordinary personages, and the introduction of Parson Adams to Parson Barnabas.* 85

### CHAP. XVII.

*A pleasant discourse between the two parsons and the bookseller , which was broke off by an unlucky accident happening in the inn, which produced a dialogue between Mrs. Tow-wouse and her maid, of no gentle kind.* 100

### CHAP. XVIII.

*The history of Betty the chambermaid , and an account of what occasioned the violent scene in the preceding chapter.* 109

# CONTENTS.

## BOOK II.

### CHAP. I.

*OF divisions in authors.* 114

### CHAP. II.

*A surprising instance of Mr Adams's short memory, with the unfortunate consequences which it brought on Joseph.* 118

### CHAP. III.

*The opinion of two lawyers concerning the same gentleman, with Mr Adams's inquiry into the religion of his host.* 125

### CHAP. IV.

*The history of Leonora, or The Unfortunate Jilt.* 135

### CHAP. V.

*A dreadful quarrel which happened at the inn where the company dined ; with its bloody consequences to Mr Adams.* 162

### CHAP. VI.

*Conclusion of The Unfortunate Jilt.* 175

## CONTENTS.

### CHAP. VII.

*A very short chapter, in which Parson Adams went a great way.* 183

### CHAP. VIII.

*A notable dissertation by Mr Abraham Adams, wherein that gentleman appears in a political light.* 187

### CHAP. IX.

*In which the gentleman descants on bravery and heroic virtue, till an unlucky accident puts an end to the discourse.* 192

### CHAP. X.

*Giving an account of the strange catastrophe of the preceding adventure, which drew poor Adams into fresh calamities; and who the woman was, who owed the preservation of her chastity to his victorious arm.* 200

### CHAP. XI.

*What happened to them while before the Justice. A chapter very full of learning.* 208

## CONTENTS.

### CHAP. XII.

*A very delightful adventure, as well to the persons concerned, as to the good-natured reader.*

219.

### CHAP. XIII.

*A dissertation concerning high people and low people, with Mrs Slipslop's departure in no very good temper of mind, and the evil plight in which she left Adams and his company.*

225.

### CHAP. XIV.

*An interview between Parson Adams and Parson Trulliber.*

235

### CHAP. XV.

*An adventure, the consequence of a new instance which Parson Adams gave of his forgetfulness.*

245.

### CHAP. XVI.

*A very curious adventure, in which Mr Adams gave a much greater instance of the honest simplicity of his heart, than of his experience in the ways of this world.*

250.

# CONTENTS:

## CHAP. XVII

*A dialogue between Mr Abraham Adams and his host, which, by the disagreement in their opinions, seemed to threaten an unlucky catastrophe, had it not been timely prevented by the return of the lovers. 263*

## CHAP. XVI

## CHAP. XV

## CHAP. XIV